

3

THE
CREDIBILITY
OF THE
GOSPEL HISTORY.
PART II.
OR THE
PRINCIPAL FACTS
OF THE
NEW TESTAMENT

Confirmed by Passages of ancient Authors, who were
contemporary with our SAVIOUR, or his APO-
STLES, or lived near their Time.

VOL. I.

Containing the History of the most early Christian Wri-
ters, and their Testimony to the Books of the NEW
TESTAMENT:

By *NATHANIEL LARDNER*, D. D.

LONDON:

Sold by J. NOON in Cheapside, T. SANDERS in Little
Britain, and J. WAUGH in Gracechurch Street.

M DCC XLVIII.

3





T H E
P R E F A C E.

THE design of this work has been shewn in the preface and introduction to the foregoing Part. It is, in short, to enable persons of ordinarie capacities, who have not an opportunity of reading ancient authors, to judge for themselves concerning the external evidence of the facts related in the New Testament. They who are pleased to attend to this will soon perceive the reason of the method observed in this work: Why I not only transcribe passages at length, but likewise prefix a historie of the authors themselves. This I have done very much in the words of other ancient writers, who were their contemporaries, or not very re-

P R E F A C E.

mote from them in time : mentioning also the sentiments of some learned moderns, eminent for their skill in antiquity, who have already writ with great diligence and accuracie the historie of my authors and their works. Somewhat of this kind was necessarie for the information and satisfaction of those, for whom this work is chiefly intended. It might be well expected, that I should observe the age and character of the witnesses I produce : and distinguish their genuine writings from others, if any have been without ground ascribed to them. The testimonies themselves I have endeavored likewise so to dispose, as that the value of them might be most readily perceived.

I am aware, that some learned men, who have already formed their judgement upon a full knowledge of Antiquity,

P R E F A C E.

quity, may at first dislike the alleging in this volume so many passages, which contain at the most only allusions to the writings of the New Testament, some of which too may appear doubtful and uncertain. But if these had been wholly omitted, I do not see how the representation of this evidence could have been complete. And when it is considered, that I do not lay a stress upon all these passages, but after the producing them sum up the testimonies of each author, and often distinguish the importance of the passages alleged, and leave it to every one to judge as he sees best; I hope, this conduct will be no longer disapproved.

The authors are produced in the order of time. By this means their authority and the value of their testimonies immediately appear: it being allowed by all, that the respect for a

P R E F A C E.

Writer's testimonie ought to be proportioned very much to his nearnesse to the time of which he writes.

Many of the passages are placed at the bottom of the page in their original languages, which will not be disagreeable to those who are acquainted with them. And beside these, there are a few notes, more particularly intended for the less learned reader : which are referred to by small capitals, as in the former part.

The translations are my own, unless I give notice of my borrowing from others : for which, I suppose, there will be seldom occasion. But there is one person of great eminence on account of his station in the Church, and the merit of his services for the Christian Religion, to whom I am obliged to make my acknowledgements in this place : I mean His Grace the Arch-Bishop of *Canterburie*

P R E F A C E.

terburie. There are few of the many passages of the Apostolical Fathers here alleged, which I had not translated, as I collected them out of the originals: But I have since thought proper, to make my own more agreeable to His Lordship's well known and Apostolical *English*: and I have often taken His translation entire, without any alteration.

Though I have used my best care and diligence, it is nevertheless very natural to be apprehensive of some errors and omissions in a work of this compass and difficulty. I can relye upon the candour of the learned and judicious, who may observe them: and upon information I will readily own and correct the errors, and supply the omissions, if they are material. For what is here aimed at is not glorie, but truth and a fair representation of it.

P R E F A C E.

The method is prolix: But the subject is of importance. And perhaps in this way some disputes may be shortened, and some questions decided, which could not be so well determined otherwise. And possibly the whole we have to offer may be brought within less room than could be at first imagined.

The work will not, I presume, be judged altogether useless, or unnecessary at this time. The Fathers have not been hitherto considered in this method. Though many excellent and beautiful passages have been transcribed out of them by others in modern languages, none have yet, so far as I know, attempted the transcribing at length their testimonie to the Sacred Scriptures. Nor has the Canon of the New Testament been often considered and enquired into
in

P R E F A C E.

in this method, of placing together at once the testimonie of every age as it ariseth : But generally the evidence for particular books has been collected, and placed by itself. Which though it have some advantages, I believe it will be found, that the method here taken has also some peculiar advantages belonging to it.

It was the reading of the works of *Eusebius of Cesarea*, and particularly his *Ecclesiastical Historie*, in which he has collected so many passages of ancient Writers before him, that gave the first rise to this design. Though the execution of it should not be equal to the model upon which it was formed, it may be of benefit to some. A large part of the riches of that work will be transferred into this, and will be it's greatest ornament.

The

P R E F A C E.

The numerous passages here produced out of ancient authors will not discourage any who have ability and opportunity from going to the originals: but rather, I hope, be a means of leading some into a farther acquaintance with them. After all the *Ecclesiastical Histories, Bibliothèques and Memoirs*, that have been published, there remain, if I mistake not, good gleanings in Ecclesiastical Antiquity for those who shall be pleased to be at the pains of gathering them in. The ancient writers of the Church will ever afford somewhat curious and entertaining to an attentive and judicious reader. The study of the Fathers is indeed laborious, and not very profitable with regard to any secular advantages: but it is the fiter for men of generous minds, who prefer the pleasure of gaining

P R E F A C E.

gaining and communicating useful knowledge to all the pomp of a vain world. Nor is every one who looks into these writings obliged to make the study of them his professed work and employment. A man of ingenuity and a good taste may gain a considerable knowledge of them (especially of the most ancient and most valuable) for his own satisfaction in the way of amusement.

It was not my intention to publish a part of the evidence for the *Principal Facts* of the New Testament, untill the whole work was compleated. But the notice I gave of this in the preface to the former Part has brought upon me some importunities, with which I have so far complied, as to publish this volume by itself. And again I am disappointed in not exhibiting now at once the whole evidence

P R E F A C E.

dence of the two first centuries of Christianity for the genuinnesse and authority of the books of the New Testament. However, I have thought it most expedient to break off here for the present, rather than make the volume of an inconvenient size. The rest will follow as soon as may be consistent with my other engagements.

As my aim in this work has been the promoting, according to my ability, the interest of true religion; it is no small satisfaction to me, that the first Part of it was so well received at home, and that it has been so far approved abroad, as to be translated by two learned Foreigners; by Mr. *Cornelius Westerbaen* of *Utrecht* into *Low Dutch*, and by Mr. *J. Christopher Wolff* of *Hamburg* into *Latin*. I cannot but esteem it an uncommon-

P R E F A C E.

common happineſſe, that my thoughts have been ſo juſtly represented by perſons well known in the Republic of Letters for compositions of their own.

London, March 1.
174 $\frac{1}{2}$

A D V E R T I S E M E N T.

WHAT is above is the general Preface to the ſecond Part of this work. In this ſecond edition of the firſt and ſecond volumes the Additions, which had been put at the end of the ſecond and fourth volumes are inſerted in their proper places. And there are beſides a few other Additions, now firſt published. At the beginning of the larger Chapters, of *Juſtin Martyr*, *Irenæus*, *Clement of Alexandria*, and *Tertulian*, are prefixed Contents, which were wanting in the former edition. And the Alphabetical Table at the end is made fuller.

May 28. 1748.

The

*The Reigns of the Roman Emperours
during the first two Centuries of
the Christian Æra.*

AUGUSTUS having reigned from the death of *Julius Cæsar* 57 years and some months, and from the defeat of *Marc Antonie* at *Actium* 44 years, died

A. Chr.

<i>Actium</i> 44 years, died	Aug. 19.	14.
<i>Tiberius</i> began his reign	Aug. 19.	14.
<i>Caius Caligula</i>	Mar. 16.	37.
<i>Claudius</i>	Jan. 24.	41.
<i>Nero</i>	Oct. 13.	54.
<i>Nero</i> died	June 9.	68.
<i>Galba</i> } reigned { June 9. 68. }	to { Jan. 15. }	69.
<i>Otho</i> } from { Jan. 17. 69. }		
<i>Vitellius</i> } { Jan. 2. 69. }		
<i>Vespasian</i> began his reign	July 1.	69.
<i>Titus</i>	June 24.	79.
<i>Domitian</i>	Sept. 13.	81.
<i>Nerva</i>	Sept. 18.	96.
<i>Trajan</i>	Jan. 27.	98.
<i>Adrian</i>	Aug. 10.	117.
<i>Antonine the Pious</i>	July 10.	138.
<i>Marc Antonine the Philosopher</i>	Mar. 7.	161.
<i>Commodus</i>	Mar. 17.	180.
<i>Helvius Pertinax</i>	Dec. 31.	192.
<i>Didius Julianus</i>	Mar. 28.	193.
<i>Septimius Severus</i> reigned from		
April 13. 193. to Feb. 4.		211.

THE



THE
CONTENTS
OF THE
FIRST VOLUME.

Year of Christ. Page.

THE INTRODUCTION.	I.
Chap. I. <i>St. BARNABAS.</i>	71.—23.
Chap. II. <i>St. CLEMENT.</i>	96.—48.
III. <i>A fragment called</i> <i>St. CLEMENT'S SECOND</i> <i>EPISTLE.</i>	104.
IV. <i>HERMAS.</i>	100.—109.
V. <i>St. IGNATIUS.</i>	107.—144.
VI. <i>St. POLYCARP.</i>	108.—189.
VII. <i>The RELATION of</i> <i>St. POLYCARP'S Mar-</i> <i>tydom : and general ob-</i> <i>servations on the testimo-</i> <i>nie of the APOSTOLICAL</i> <i>FATHERS.</i>	221.
VIII. <i>EVANGELISTS in</i> <i>the reign of TRAJAN.</i>	112.—232.
IX. <i>PAPIAS.</i>	116.—236.
X. <i>JUSTIN MARTYR.</i>	140.—254.
XI. <i>The EPISTLE TO</i> <i>DIOGNETUS.</i>	287.
	XII.

CONTENTS.

Chap.		Year of Christ.	Page:
XII.	DIONYSIUS OF CORINTH.	170.—	296.
XIII.	TATIAN.	172.—	303.
XIV.	HEGESIPPUS.	173.—	313.
XV.	MELITO	177.—	325.
XVI.	<i>The</i> EPISTLE of the churches of VIENNE and LYONS.	177.—	332.
XVII.	St. IRENAEUS.	178.—	343.
XVIII.	ATHENAGORAS.	178.—	404.

ERRATA in both Volumes.

PAGE 57. line 9. for this read his.
 59. l. 6. for the r. that.
 218. l. 12. r. 1 John iv.
 391. l. 12. r. therefore.
 445. l. 1. after *righteously* put a comma.
 724. l. last. r. Oracles.

In the Notes.

Page xix. l. penult leg. *Synagog.*
 49. l. last r. *orthodoxie.*
 156. l. 6. leg. *ἐπίσκοπον*
 l. 17. leg. *καὶ γὰρ*
 400. l. 2. leg. *βραβεί, καὶ ἐν πόσει, καὶ ἐν μέρεσιν*
ἐοπίης. κ. λ.

INTRO-



INTRODUCTION.

HAVING in a former treatise produced sufficient evidence of that part of the *Gospel Historie*, which concerns the facts *occasionally* mentioned in the New Testament; I now proceed to lay before the public, in a like manner, the evidences of the *principal* facts of the same historie, which in the introduction to the foregoing part were briefly said to be these: "The birth and preaching of *John* the Baptist; the miraculous conception and birth, the discourses, miracles, predictions, crucifixion, resurrection, and ascension of Jesus Christ; the mission of the Apostles, the descent of the Holy Ghost upon them, and the other attestations, which were given to the divine authority of Jesus Christ, and the truth of his doctrine."

It may be now proper to represent these particulars somewhat more at large. The

B

substance

— substance of the historie of the New Testament then is this :

Matth. i.
Luke i.

Jesus, called the Christ, having been conceived by the power of the Holy Ghost in the womb of a Virgin named *Mary*, espoused to a mean person whose name was *Joseph*, of the familie of *David*, was born at *Bethlehem* in *Judea*, in the reign of *Herod* King of the *Jews*, at a time when there was a *taxing*, or enrolment, ordered in that countrey by a decree of *Augustus*, the Roman Emperor.

Luke ii.

The birth of Jesus was attended and followed with some events of an extraordinarie nature. After eight days he was circumcised, and then presented at the temple according to the *custom of the law of Moses*. And his birth, as King of the *Jews*, having been notified at *Jerusalem*, by the arrival of some wise men of the East, who had seen his star in their own countrey, and came to *Jerusalem* to worship him; *Herod* formed a design against the life of the young child. But he was preserved by flight into *Egypt*, whither he was carried by *Joseph*, together with his mother *Mary*, by divine order. And after a short space of time was brought back again by *Joseph*, who then
went

INTRODUCTION.

iii

went and settled at *Nazareth*. There is ^{Luke iii} little more related of the early part of his ^{41.} life, except that at the age of twelve years he went up to *Jerusalem* at the feast of the Passover, where he gave some proofs of uncommon knowledge, and returned thence to *Nazareth*, and was subject to his parents.

In the fifteenth year of the reign of *Tiberius Cæsar*, then Emperour of *Rome*, *Pontius Pilate* being Governour of *Judea*, and *Herod Tetrarch* of *Galilee*, *John*, called the Baptist, son of *Zacharias*, of the race of ^{Luke ii.} the *Jewish* Priests, and of his wife *Elizabeth*, who was born a few months before *Jesus*, in the reign of the forementioned *Herod*, King of the *Jews*, appeared in the countrey beyond *Jordan*, preaching the ^{Matth. iii.} *baptism of repentance for the remission of sins.* ^{Mark i.} And great numbers of men from all parts of *Judea* resorted to him, and were baptized, *confessing their sins*. He taught, that the kingdom of God was at hand, bid men bring forth fruits meet for repentance, and not to depend upon any national privileges, or external performances, for acceptance with God. *The people were then in expectation, and all men mused in their hearts,* ^{Luke iii.} ^{15.} *whether he were the Christ or not.* And

John i. 19. when the *Jews sent Priests and Levites from*
 20. *Jerusalem to ask him, who he was, he con-*
fessed, he was not the Christ: at the same
time openly declaring, that there was then
 John i. 26. *among them a great person, whom, as yet,*
 27. *they knew not: and though he came after*
 Luke iii. *him, he was so far preferred before him,*
 16. *that he was not worthy to unloose the latchet*
 Matth. iii. *of his shoes: and whereas he baptized them*
 11. *with water unto repentance, this great person*
would baptize them with the Holy Ghost and
with fire.

When a great part of the people had been
 baptized, *Jesus also came to John, and was*
 Matth. iii. *baptized of him in Jordan. And Jesus,*
 13. *when he was baptized, went up straitway out*
of the water: and lo, the heavens were open-
ed unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God
descending like a dove, and lighting upon him.
And lo, a voice from heaven, saying: This is
my beloved son, in whom I am well pleased.
 Luke iii. *At which time Jesus was about thirty years of*
 23. *age.*

Matth. iv. Having been thus baptized, he was led by
 Luke iv. the Spirit into a solitarie and desert place,
 where he fasted forty days and forty nights,
 and had a great and remarkable temptation.

The

The temptation being ended, *he returned* ^{Luke iv. 14.}
in the power of the Spirit into Galilee, and wrought miracles, and began to gather disciples, who *seeing his glory believed on him.* ^{John ii. 11.}
 At which time *John* still baptizing, bore testimonie to him; that he was the person of whom he had spoken, and that he *must* ^{John iii. 30, 34.}
encrease. But, says he, *I must decrease: he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: For God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him.*

Soon after this, *John* was cast into prison ^{Matt. xiv. 1—12.}
 for his free, but just reproofs of *Herod* the Tetrarch of *Galilee*: by whose order he was ^{Mark vi. 16. 29.}
 also afterwards beheaded. ^{Luke iii. 19. 20.}

When *John* had been cast into prison, ^{ix. 9.}
Jesus began to preach more publicly: and ^{Matth. iv. 12.}
 having chosen out of the number of his disciples twelve, whom he named Apostles, to ^{Mark i. 14.}
 be generally with him, that they might be ^{Mark iii. 13.}
 afterwards the witnesses to the world of his ^{Luke vi. 12. 13.}
 life; his doctrine, miracles, and resurrection, ^{Acts x. 39. 40. 41.}
 he went about the several parts of the country of *Judea*, resorting likewise to *Jerusalem* at the time of the great feasts of the *Jewish* nation.

He taught, that men should repent, and for their encouragement declared, that he

Matt. ix. 13. *came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.* He moreover taught, that God

John iv. 21. 23. 24. *is to be worshiped in spirit and truth, and that such worship is acceptable in all places.*

Matt. xv. 19. 20. *That the things which defile a man are those which proceed out of the heart; evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies; but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man:*

Matt. vii. 12. *That the great branches of men's duty are the love of God and their neighbour; That men should do to others, as they would*

Matt. v. 44. 45. *that others should do to them: That they ought to imitate God in mercy, forgiveness, and all goodness: That they ought to be pure in heart, as well as unblamable in their outward actions: That they ought*

Matt. vi. 1. *not to pray, fast, or give alms to be seen of men; but in all things to act with an eye to the approbation and acceptance of God, who seeth the most secret, as well as the most public actions.* He recommended moderate affections for the things of this present

Ver. 19. 20. *world, and bid men seek in the first place the kingdom of God and his righteousness,*

Ver. 25. *and without solicitude and anxiety about the concerns of this life, to confide in the providence of God, which oversees and directs*

all

all things. He assured them, that they who believed in God, and in him whom God had sent, and obeyed the commandments delivered by him, should enjoy eternal life, *and he would raise them up at the last day* : John vi. That God had given all authority and judgment to him, and that he would come again, and render to all according to their works. And of this doctrine, taught by him, he required a sincere and open profession, declaring : *Whosoever shall confess me before men, him will I also confess before my Father which is in heaven. But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.* Matt. x. 32. 33.

These, and the like excellent precepts, and powerful inducements to all virtue, he taught and inculcated every where ; speaking sometimes plainly, sometimes in parables, as *men were able to bear him* ; always with such a mixture of authority and familiarity for the manner, such weight and dignity for the matter of his discourses, that the multitude *wondered at the gracious words that proceeded out of his mouth* ; and enemies were obliged to acknowledge, that *never man spake like him.* Matt. v. vi. vii. Luke vi. Matt. xiii. Mark iv. 33. Luke iv. 22. John vii. 46.

As he went about teaching this doctrine, he wrought many miracles as evidences, that the Father had sent him, and of the truth of all his words. He turned water into wine; fed with a few loaves and fishes great multitudes in desert places; walked on the sea; calmed the winds and the waves; gave sight to the blind, hearing to the deaf, speech to the dumb, soundness and strength to the lame, and those that were bowed down; healed diseases of all sorts; restored to their right mind lunatics and demoniacs, and raised the dead. These miracles were performed at his word, in an instant, and some were wrought on persons at a distance from him. They were done by him in the most public and open manner; at *Jerusalem*, and in every part of *Judea* and *Galilee*; in cities, in villages, in synagogues, in private houses, in the streets, and the highways, in the presence of enemies, before Scribes and Pharisees, and rulers of synagogues, when attended by multitudes: in a word, before men of all characters.

There were also in the course of his ministrie divers other signal testimonies given to him. Beside the voice from heaven

ven
pres
face
whi
dow
clou
who
ano
by
Fat
from
and
T
pro
to
had
hea
I
he
tho
freq
circ
tion
his
the
pec
men
oth

ven at his baptism, he was *transfigured* in the ^{Mat. xvij. 1—8. See} presence of three of his disciples, when *his* ^{Mark ix. 2. Luke ix. 28.} face shone as the sun, and his raiment was white as light, and a bright cloud overshadowed them; and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said: *This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased, bear ye him.* At another time, being at *Jerusalem*, surrounded by a great multitude, and having prayed: *Father, glorify thy name; there came a voice* ^{John xii. 28.} *from heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again.*

To all these great things he appealed, as ^{John v. 19. 20. 32—38. x. 25. 37.} proofs of his divine authority; refering men to the witnesse of *John*, the miracles he ^{38.} had wrought, and these testimonies from heaven.

Beside the wonderful works done by him, he also manifested a clear knowledge of the thoughts and designs of men, and foretold frequently, and expressly, and with many circumstances, his own death and resurrection; the descent of the Holy Ghost upon his Apostles; their sufferings and successe; the destruction of *Jerusalem* (at the prospect of which he was so affected, as to lament over that city with tears) and many other events; that when they came to pass,
his

John xiii. his disciples and others might be confirmed
19. in their faith in him and his doctrine.

Mat. x. 1. He had likewise sent forth from him, for
Mark iii. a time, his twelve disciples, and after that
15. seventy other, *with power and authority over*
Luke ix. 1. *all devils, and to cure diseases, to preach the*
x. 1. *kingdom of God, and to heal the sick: which*
they did, and returned with great joy.

While God thus glorified him, he lived in a mean condition, without external state and splendour, and was meek and condescending in his behaviour toward his disciples, and all who resorted to him for instruction, or relief: at the same time freely declaring to all their duty, and impartially correcting the faults and failings of his disciples: and with a true prophetic resolution and intrepidity reproving the hypocrisie, pride, ambition, covetousnesse, false maxims, and vain traditions of the *Scribes and Pharisees*, and the chief men of the *Jewish* nation.

When he had fully taught and confirmed
John xiii. his doctrine, knowing that the time of his
1. departure out of this world was nigh, and that the Father had put all things into his hands; he took his leave of his disciples in the most affectionate and instructive manner,
John xiii. and
xiv. xv.
xvi. xvii.

and appointed a memorial of himself and his death. And then retiring to a private place, where he sometimes resorted with his disciples: and having resigned himself to the will of the Father, with regard to the bitter sufferings, of which he had a near and affecting prospect, he was betrayed by one of his disciples to the Chief Priests and Council of the *Jewish* nation, by whom he was examined, and condemned, after he had in their presence solemnly avowed his great character: and then was by them accused and prosecuted before *Pontius Pilate*, who at their earnest and clamorous importunity was prevailed upon, against his own conscience, to condemn him to be crucified. And he was accordingly crucified near *Jerusalem*, at the great feast of the Passover, in the common place of execution, between two malefactors. However, during this very extraordinarie scene of sufferings, there were some extraordinarie testimonies given to his innocence and dignity. There was a darknesse of *three hours* continuance over the whole land: the *vail of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom, and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent.*

Mat. xxvi.

xxvii.

Mark xiv.

xv.

Luke xxii.

xxiii.

John xviii.

xix,

Mat. xxvii.

45. 51.

Jesus

Jesus having expired on the crosse, and Pilate having received particular information that he was dead ; the body was with his leave taken down from the crosse, and laid in a sepulchre, in which *never man before was laid.* And the Jewish Council took care to have the sepulchre secured by a guard of Roman soldiers, *least, as they said, his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and then say to the people, he is risen from the dead.*

Luke
xxiii. 53.

Mat. xxvii.
64.

Matth.
xxviii.
Mark xvi.
Luke xxiv.
John xx.

Acts i. 3.

Matth.
xxviii. 18.
19. 20.

Luke xxiv.
49—51.

But notwithstanding these precautions of his enemies, who had all power and authority in that countrey ; on the third day after his crucifixion and burial, early in the morning Jesus arose, and shewed himself to his Apostles, and others who were well acquainted with him. He was seen of them several times for the space of *forty days.* They viewed him, they handled him, he discoursed and ate with them, and said to his Apostles: *All power is given to me in heaven and on earth: Go ye therefore, says he, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: teaching them to observe whatsoever I have commanded you.* And having renewed to them the promise of the Holy Ghost, and

com-

commanded them to *tarry at Jerusalem*, till they were *endowed with power from on high*; he led them out to *Bethanie*, where he was parted from them, and while they beheld, he Acts i. 9. was taken up, and a cloud received him out of their sight.

After which, at the motion of *Peter* for Acts i. 15. supplying the vacance made by the apostasie and death of *Judas*, *Matthias* was added to the eleven Apostles by divine appointment.

At the Pentecost next following the Passover, at which Jesus had been crucified, the promised gift of the Holy Ghost was bestowed upon the Apostles, and the men that were with them, and they began to speak with divers tongues. At the same time there Acts ii. 1. were at *Jerusalem*, beside the stated inhabitants, from all parts of the world, *Jews*, and Proselytes of the *Jewish* religion; men of the greatest zeal, understanding, and prudence; who when they heard them speak the wonderful works of God in the languages of the several countreys in which they resided, were amazed and marvelled. Whereupon *Peter* standing up with the eleven, informed them, that Jesus, whom the rulers of the *Jewish* nation had taken, and with wicked hands had crucified, after he had been approved

Acts ii. 36.
37. 38.

approved of God by miracles, signs and wonders, done by him in the midst of them, had been raised up by God : of which they, his Apostles, were witnesses : And that the same Jesus, being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, had shed forth that which they now saw and heard. And concluded his discourse with these words : Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus whom ye have crucified both Lord and Christ. And when they were hereupon filled with much concern of mind, and said, What shall we do ? Peter said unto them : Repent, and be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Ver. 41.

Acts v.
12. 14.

Such was the effect of this discourse, and these exhortations, consequent upon the wonderful effusion of the Holy Ghost, that many gladly received the word, and were baptized, and the same day there were added unto the disciples about three thousand souls. And by the hands of Peter, and the other Apostles, were many signs and wonders wrought among the people, which could not be disputed. And believers were added to the Lord, multitudes
of

of men and women. All this multitude lived in the greatest harmonie, neither was there Acts iv. *any among them that lacked: for as many as* 34. 35. *were possessed of houses or lands, sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold, and laid them down at the Apostles feet: and distribution was made unto every man, according as he had need. But the care of making a proper distribution to so many persons being too great for the Apostles, and some obstruction to them in their main work of preaching, and some complaints likewise being made, there were chosen seven men* — vi. *to attend the daily ministration.*

Beside the numerous church at *Jerusalem*, there were also in a short time several churches of the faithful gathered in other parts; in *Judea*, in *Galilee*, and *Samaria*. — ix. 31. And on those who believed were bestowed the gifts of the Holy Ghost, by prayer and — viii. 14. — 17. the laying on of the hands of the Apostles.

This begining and progresse had the doctrine of the gospel, notwithstanding many hardships and sufferings endured by the Apostles, and the believers of every rank.

When this doctrine had been planted in — x. the minds of great numbers of *Jews* and *Samaritans*, it was preached by *Peter*, and then

then by others, to *Gentils*, men uncircumcised, in the land of *Judea*, and in the neighboring countreys: and among them were converts made, upon whom also were bestowed gifts of the Holy Ghost.

In the mean time *Saul*, called also *Paul*, who had been of the sect of the *Pharisees*, educated by *Gamaliel*, a celebrated Doctor among the *Jewish* people, and who had been a warm and violent opposer and persecutor of the disciples of Jesus, was converted to the same faith by an extraordinarie appearance. Who received the full knowledge of the doctrine of the gospel by special revelation, and was appointed an Apostle by Jesus Christ himself, without the interposition of any of those who had been Apostles before. As the other Apostles had done, he also spoke with tongues, wrought miracles in great variety and abundance, and conferred gifts of the Holy Ghost upon his converts.

Paul, together with *Barnabas* and his fellow-workers in the gospel, taught, as *Peter* had done before, that God had raised up Jesus from the dead, exhorted men to repent, and believe in him whom God had sent. To the *Gentils* he declared, that they should

turn

turn
made
fort
the
appo
the
he l
ran
from
asser
thei
and
of t
I
grea
stian
vert
of
of v
T
first
soci
ther
ship

(a)
(b)
as in
Asia
many

turn from idols to the worship of God that made the heaven and the earth, and bring forth fruits meet for repentance, or, live in the practise of virtue: *forasmuch as God had* Acts xvii: *appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness, by that man whom he has ordained, whereof he has given assurance unto all men, in that he has raised him from the dead.* He moreover strenuously asserted the acceptance of the Gentils, and their right to all the privileges of the church and people of God, without the observation of the rites of the law of *Moses*.

In preaching this doctrine he also had great successe, and formed churches of Christians in many places, consisting of men converted from idolatrie and vice to the worship of God, a faith in Jesus, and the practise of virtue.

The converts of each city, having been (a) first baptized, were formed into religious societies and (b) churches, which met together for the performance of religious worship: In which assemblies they worshiped
C God

(a) Acts ii. 41. viii. 12. Rom. vi. 3. 1 Cor. i. 13---16.

(b) Gal. i. 2. *to the churches of Galatia.* 1 Cor. xiv. 33. *as in all the churches of the saints.* xvi. 19. *The churches of Asia salute you.* 2 Cor. viii, *the churches of Macedonia, and many other places.*

God (*c*) by prayers and praises, had (*d*) discourses and exhortations, and readings (*e*) of sacred writings, and (*f*) celebrated the memorie of the death of Jesus Christ, by eating together bread, and drinking wine in a solemn manner. And they were directed by the Apostles to pray (*g*) for *Kings*, and *Governors*, and *all who are in authority*. These assemblies were ordinarily held at least every first day of the (*h*) week, called the (*i*) *Lord's day*, in memorie of the resurrection of Jesus from the dead: on which (*k*) day, they were directed also to *lay by in store*, as *God had prospered them*, for the relief of their necessitous brethren.

And that the worship of these assemblies might be performed in an orderly and decent manner, for general profit and instruction in the principles and practise of piety: and that the necessities of each member might be duly provided for, and true religion preserved among them in a flourishing condition; there were at the very time of
forming

(*c*) Acts i. 14. 24. ii. 42. vi. 4. 1 Cor. xiv. 14---17.

(*d*) 1 Cor. xiv. throughout. Acts xviii. 11. xx. 7. Gal. vi. 6. Hebr. xiii. 7.

(*e*) Coloss. iv. 16. 1 Thess. v. 27.

(*f*) Acts ii. 42. xx. 7. 1 Cor. xi. 23.

(*g*) 1 Tim. ii. 1. 2.

(*h*) Acts xx. 7.

(*i*) Rev. i. 10.

(*k*) 1 Cor. xvi. 2.

forming such societies, or soon (l) after, appointed in them officers and ministers, called (m) Bishops, or Elders, or Pastors, or teachers; and Deacons: men who had been before approved, as persons of integrity and capacity for the work to which they were appointed. The peculiar work (n) of the former of whom was to preach the word, and feed the flock, of which they were overseers, with wholesome and sound doctrine and instruction; *to reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering, and doctrine.* Of the later, the peculiar work, according to the primitive institution, was the *serving tables*, and making a prudent and faithful distribution of the stock of the (A) society.

1 Tim. iii.
10.

Acts vi. 2;

C 2

And

(l) See Whitby's annotations on 1 Cor. xiv. 32. Gal. vi. 3. and the Paraphrase on 1 Thess. after Mr. Locke's manner; the note on chap. v. 12.

(m) To all the saints which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons. Philip. i. 1.

(n) See Acts xx. 28. the epistles to Timothy and Titus. 1 Pet. v. 1.

(A) Some however are of opinion, that the seven men of the church of Jerusalem, who were appointed by the Apostles for *serving tables*, were quite different from the Deacons, concerning whom Paul speaks in his epistles to Timothy and the Philippians, and who were known by the name of Deacons in the primitive Christian churches. They think, that the seven in the Acts were extraordinary ministers or assistants, chosen for a particular occasion, the like to which were not continued in the church. This opinion has been learnedly asserted by Vitringa De Synag. Vet. l. 3. P. 2. Cap. V. p. 920—934.

And these several officers were to be examples of all virtue to the rest of the christian societies, in which they presided and ministred: as these societies themselves were to be examples to the world around them.

These Apostles of Christ, (of whom we have particularly spoken) together with their companions and fellow-laborers, Evangelists, and others, had such success in the work of preaching the gospel, that before they left the world, they had erected societies, or churches of Christians, in most parts of the Roman Empire; in the countreys of *Judea*, *Cyprus*, *Crete*, *Pontus*, *Galatia*, *Cappadocia*, *Asia*, *Greece*, and *Italie*, in the cities of *Jerusalem*, *Cesarea*, *Antioch*, *Ephesus*, *Athens*, *Corinth*, *Philippi*, *Thessalonica*, *Rome*, and in other cities and countreys: consisting, it is likely, for the most part, of persons of mean condition. But there were likewise among them men of learning, wealth, and power.

By these means, and upon this foundation, was raised the church of Christ, which still subsists, and against which, according to his express assurance, no adverse power shall ever prevail.

Mat. xvi.
16.

This is the substance of the historie of the New Testament, which being well known
needs

needs not, I presume, to be drawn out here into a greater length. Of these several things I propose to collect the evidence, which there may be in ancient writers; whether Christians, or others.

I begin with testimonies of Christian writers, which will be placed in the following order.

I. Their testimonies concerning the antiquity, genuinnesse, and authority of the books of the New Testament, in which is contained this historie.

II. Their testimonies concerning the facts, properly so called; the birth, miracles, death, resurrection of Jesus Christ; the mission of the Apostles, their miracles, and successe.

III. The doctrine and principles of belief and practise, delivered and taught by Christ and his Apostles.

IV. The worship appointed by Christ and his Apostles.

Which two last are to be considered as facts; that is, that those principles were delivered, and that worship here spoken of, was appointed by Christ, and his Apostles.

All which testimonies to these several matters of fact may be confirmed, I believe, by some considerations, which will add weight

to them, and very much encrease their credibility.

And if it should be needful, some objections to the validity of this evidence may be stated and considered.

I now proceed to exhibit in the first place the testimonies of Christian writers concerning the books of the New Testament.



T H E

fold
mor
iv.
pel
Par



THE
PRINCIPAL FACTS
OF THE
NEW TESTAMENT
CONFIRMED, &c.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

St. BARNABAS.

His Historie.



BARNABAS was a *Levite*, of *A. D.*
the countrey of *Cyprus*, and one ^{71.}
of those Christians, who soon
after the resurrection of Jesus
fold their goods and lands, and brought the
money, and *laid it at the Apostles feet.* Acts
iv. 36. 37. He afterwards preached the gos-
pel in divers parts, together with the Apostle
Paul. But upon a dissension about the per- Acts xv.
son ^{36.}

A. D.

71.

son that should accompany them in a journey they were undertaking, they separated from each other : though, it is likely, in friendship, or at least they were afterwards reconciled, as may be concluded from the honorable and affectionate mention, which St. *Paul* makes of *Barnabas* (a), and *Mark* (b), the person about whom the dispute was, in some of his epistles. And *Barnabas* has this testimonie given him by (c) St. *Luke*, that he *was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost, and of faith*. There is little known of him, beside what is said in the New Testament : except that some of the ancients have supposed him to be one of Christ's seventy Disciples, whom he employed in preaching in the land of *Judea*, in his own life-time on earth.

There is still extant an epistle, ascribed to St. *Barnabas*. It consists of two parts. The first is an exhortation and argument to constance in the belief and profession of the *Christian* doctrine ; particularly, the simplicity of it, without the rites of the *Jewish* law. The second part contains moral instructions.

In

(a) 1 Cor. ix. 6.
Philem. 24.

(b) Col. iv. 10. 2 Tim. iv. 11.
(c) Acts xi. 24.

In order to judge of the antiquity and authority of this piece, and the value of the testimonies to be taken from it; I shall give some account of it from the most ancient Christian writers. The same method will be observed with regard to other writings, which I now take with this epistle, the first piece quoted by me.

St. Clement of *Alexandria* has often quoted him, and sometimes calls him Apostle. Rightly (d) therefore says the Apostle Barnabas. I need (e) only allege the Apostolical Barnabas, one of the seventy, and fellow-worker with Paul. These quotations are from the first part of this epistle. He has also quoted a passage (f) found in the last chapter of this epistle, which assures us, that the second part, containing the moral instructions, was supposed to be his, as well as the former.

Origen, in his answer to (g) Celsus, quotes it with the Title of, *The Catholic epistle of Barnabas*. In another work (h) he has quoted from him a passage now found in the second part of this epistle, as the former was from the first part of it.

Eusebe

(d) *Strom.* l. 2. p. 373. *Parif.* 1629. (e) *Ibid.* p. 410.

(f) P. 396.

(g) *Lib.* 1. p. 49. *Cantab.* 1677.

(h) *De Princip.* l. 3. c. 2.

A. D.

71.

Eusebe (i) says, " That *Clement* [of *Alexandria*] in his *Institutions* [a book now lost] has writ short commentaries upon the books of scripture, not omitting those that are contradicted : I mean the epistle of *Jude*, and the other Catholic epistles, and that of *Barnabas*, and the *Revelation of Peter*." In another (k) place *Eusebe* reckons this epistle among those books that are *spurious*; meaning, it is likely, *contradicted*.

St. Jerome, in his catalogue of *Illustrious* (l) *Men*, says, "*Barnabas* of *Cyprus*, called *Joseph*, a *Levite*, ordained an *Apostle* of the *Gentils* with *Paul*, wrote an epistle for the edification of the church, which is read among the apocryphal scriptures."

These testimonies, without adding any more, let us see the opinions of the ancients concerning this epistle; the passages cited by them being still found in that epistle, which we now have under the name of *Barnabas*.

The judgements of the (m) moderns are various. *Pearson*, *Cave*, *Du Pin*, *Wake*, and many other learned men, suppose it to be a genuine

(i) *Hist. Ec.* l. 6. c. 14. *vid.* & c. 13.

(k) *Ibid.* l. 3. c. 25. (l) *Cap.* 6.

(m) The sentiments of many moderns concerning this epistle are collected by Mr. *J. Jones*: *New and full method of settling the canonical Authority of the New Testament.* vol. 2. c. 38.

Ch.

a gen
of Pa
teler

was

there

The

are st

late

our

same

be re

T

direc

place

time

men

it w

off f

unde

It

epist

Jew

Chri

peop

(n)

ler. J

(o)

(p)

(q)

the A

a genuine epistle of *Barnabas*, the companion of *Paul*. Some are more doubtful, as (n) *Cotelerius*: who is rather inclined to think, it was not writ by *Barnabas*. Others think, there are many things in it unworthie of him. The objections against the genuinnesse of it are strongly urged by (o) *Basnage*. And the late Mr. (p) *Jeremiah Jones* has offered in our own language many objections to the same purpose. But the real difficulties may be reduced to a small number.

A. D.

71.

The epistle has no inscription, not being directed to the Christians of any particular place: for which reason it has been sometimes called a Catholic epistle. Many learned men have supposed, as (q) *Wake* does, that it was addressed to the *Jews*, to draw them off from the letter of the law to a spiritual understanding of it.

It appears to me most probable, that this epistle was writ by *Barnabas*, and not to *Jews*, but to *Gentils*: or perhaps rather to *Christians* in general, of whatever nation or people they were. The design of the epistle I think

(n) *Eo magis inclino, ut censeam non esse Apostoli. Coteler. Judicium de epist. S. Barnab.*

(o) *Ann. Pol. Eccles. A. D. 50. n. 52. & seq.*

(p) *As above, c. 39.*

(q) See his Discourse prefixed to the Genuine Epistles of the Apostolical Fathers. Chap. vii, § 14. and 35.

A. D.

71.

I think likewise, to be the same with that, which is the main design of St. Paul in the epistle to the *Galatians*, and in part in other epistles; to abate in Christians the respect for the peculiar rites and institutions of the *Jewish* laws, and to shew, that they were not binding upon Christians: which design may be also observed in the first epistle of St. Peter.

It seems evident from a passage of the epistle itself, that the temple of *Jerusalem* was destroyed at the time of writing it. For, says (r) he, *through their waging war it has been destroyed by their enemies*. In another place the author writes: *Consider (s) yet this also: that [or since] ye have seen so great signs and prodigies in the people of the Jews, and thus God forsakes them*. From both which passages I conclude, that the temple was but just destroyed: and that the signs and prodigies preceding and attending the destruction of *Jerusalem* had happened in the time of the

(r) Δία γὰρ τὸ πολεμεῖν αὐτοῖς, κατερίθην ἐπὶ τῶν ἐχθρῶν.
c. 16.

(s) Adhuc & illud intelligite, cum videritis tanta signa & monstra in populo Judaeorum, & sic illos derelinquit Dominus, cap iv. The late Arch-Bishop of *Canterburie* translates it thus: *Consider this also: although you have seen so great signs and wonders done among the people of the Jews, yet this notwithstanding the Lord has forsaken them*. But I humbly apprehend, that his Lordship has misinterpreted this passage, the verb *derelinquit* being in the present tense.

Ch. I. St. BARNABAS.

29

A. D.

71.

the persons, to whom he writes: forasmuch as they had *seen them*. And since God was now only *forsaking them*, this epistle was writ, whilst the *Jewish* people were under great afflictions; between the time of the destruction of *Jerusalem*, and the reduction of the remaining Cities of *Judea*, of which (t) *Josephus* has given an account, after the taking and burning of the temple. So that, whether this epistle be *Barnabas's*, or not, it was writ by some zealous Christian of that (A) time. And he thought fit, I suppose, to improve that opportunity for abating the extreme veneration for the *Jewish* law, which was so prejudicial to true Christianity.

Any one who reads this epistle, with but a small degree of attention, will perceive in it many *Pauline* phrases and reasonings. To give the character of the author of it in one word: He resembles St. *Paul*, as his fellow-laborer, without copying him.

I shall quote it as being probably *Barnabas's*, and certainly ancient, written soon after the destruction of *Jerusalem* by *Titus*; most likely

(t) Vid. *Jos. de B. J. l. vii. c. 6. & seq.*

(A) Dr. Mill *Prolegom. n. 144.* says it was writ about the year 70. and A. B. Wake, *somewhat after the destruction of Jerusalem.*

A. D. likely in the year of our Lord 71. or 72.
 71. And, as it is not a part of the canon of the New Testament, I have a right to make the best use of it I am able, for supporting the authority of these books, and the credit of the doctrine and facts delivered in them. We may be obliged, before we have done, to consider, what pretensions this epistle has to be a part of the canon of the New Testament. But there is no necessity for us to enter into that enquiry at present. And it may be done to better advantage hereafter.

This epistle was writ in *Greek*. But the four first chapters, or sections, and a part of the fifth, are wanting in the *Greek* copies. It is however entire in an ancient *Latin* version.

In the epistle of *Barnabas* there is not any express mention of any book of the New Testament.

But there is in it a text or two of the New Testament with a mark of quotation prefixed. And the words of several other texts are applied by him. And to some others he may be supposed to allude.

Ch. I. St. BARNABAS.

31

Quotations.

A. D.

71.

New Testament.

Barnabas.

I. Matth. xvi. 24.

I. Ch. vii. So (u)

Matthew.

If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his crosse and follow me.

they, saith he, who will see me, and obtain my kingdom, must receive me with many afflictions and sufferings.

This is plainly a quotation, though perhaps not designed for an exact quotation of the words of any text, but only of the sense. It is impossible to say, what particular text of the New Testament he refers to. But it is probable he refers to some such as that I have set over against this passage. This seems to me more likely than the words of Paul and Barnabas, Acts xiv. 22. *And that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of heaven.* See below n. xxii.

New Testament.

Barnabas.

II. Matth. xx. 16.

II. Ch. iv. Let us

So the (u) last shall be

(x) therefore beware, first,

(u) Οὕτω φησὶν, εἰ θέλουσιν με ἰδεῖν, καὶ ἁλῶσθαι με τῆς βασιλείας, ὀφείλουσιν ἀποδοῦναι καὶ ἑαυτοὺς ἀρῶντας λαβεῖν με.

(u) Πολλοὶ γὰρ εἰσι κλητοὶ, ὀλίγοι δὲ ἐκλεκτοί.

(x) Adtendamus ergo, ne forte, sicut scriptum est, multi vocati, pauci electi inveniamur.

A. D. *first, and the first last.* lest it should happen
 71. *For many be called,* to us, as it is written:
but few chosen. *There are many called,*

Ch. xxii. 14. *For few chosen.*
many are called, but
few are chosen.

This is generally allowed by learned men to be a reference to St. *Matthew's* Gospel. And it is a very remarkable one, being made in that form of quotation, which was used by the *Jews*, when they cited their sacred books: *It is written.*

We meet with in this epistle the exact words of several texts, without any marks of quotation: and there may be thought to be allusions to some others.

Words of the New Testament, or allusions to them.

N. T.

Barnabas.

Matthew.

III. Matth. v. 42.

III. Ch. xix. Give

Give (y) to him that
 asketh thee.

(a) to every one that
 asketh thee.

Luke vi. 30. Give

to (z) every one that
 asketh thee.

IV. Matth.

(y) Τῷ αἰτῶντί σε δίδω.

(z) Παντὶ δὲ τῷ αἰτῶντί
 σε δίδω.

(a) Παντὶ αἰτῶντι σε δίδω.

(b) δικάως
 μετὰ τὸν

IV. Matth. ix. 13.

IV. Ch. v. That (c) ^{A. D.}

71.

For (b) I am not come
to call the righteous,
but sinners to repen-
tance.

he might shew, that
he came not to call the
righteous, but sinners to
repentance.

In St. Matthew's Gospel, these words are spoken by Christ in answer to the reflexions made on his eating with Publicans and Sinners at Matthew's house, after he had called him to follow him, as one of his Apostles. And Barnabas says here, " That Christ chose
" for his Apostles, who were to preach his
" Gospel, men who were great sinners, that
" he might shew that he came not to call, &c.

It ought to be observed however, that the same thing is said Mark ii. 17. and Luke v. 32. and upon the same occasion. This therefore renders it doubtful, which Gospel he refers to. And it may be questioned, whether he refers at all to any written Gospel.

N. T.

Barnabas.

V. Matth. xxii.

V. Ch. xii. But be-

43. 44. He saith unto
them: How then doth
David in spirit call

cause they would say,
that Christ is the son
of David, therefore
D him

(b) Οὐ γὰρ ἦλθον καλεῖσαι
δικαίους, ἀλλ' ἁμαρτωλὸς εἰς
μετάνοιαν.

(c) Ὅτι ἐκ ἦλθε καλεῖσαι
δικαίους, ἀλλ' ἁμαρτωλὸς εἰς
μετάνοιαν.

A. D. him Lord, saying : ^{71.} *The Lord said to my Lord, sit thou on my right hand, untill I make thine enemies thy footstool.* fearing and knowing the errour of sinful men, he says: *Sit thou on my right hand, untill I make thine enemies thy footstool.* —

See Psalm cx. 1.

Behold how *David* calls him Lord.

VI. Matth. xxiv. 22. *And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.*

VI. Ch. iv. For this cause the Lord has shortened the times and days, that his beloved might hasten his coming to his inheritance.

These two last (*d*) passages I have put down, that it might not be thought I had overlooked them. But I do not think them very material. *Barnabas*, or whoever wrote this epistle, was able to make use of divers arguments from the Old Testament, found now in the Gospels, without having his eye to any written Gospel.

N. T.

Barnabas.

VII. Matth. xxv. 5. *While the bride-*

VII. Ch. iv. Take heed, least at any *groom*

(*d*) See *Jones's New and Full Method &c.* Part III. p. 21. 24. His arguments to prove, that in these two places *Barnabas* refers to St. *Matthew's* Gospel.

groom tarried, they all slumbered and slept, 6. And at midnight there was a cry made: The bridegroom cometh — 10. And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage, and the door was shut.

time siting still now *A. D.*
that we are called, *71.*
we fall asleep in our
fins, and the wicked
one geting power
over us, stir us up,
and shut us out of
the kingdom of the
Lord.

It is not unlikely, that here is an allusion to the parable of the ten virgins. But we have here only the old *Latin* translation of this epistle: for which reason this passage appears with disadvantage.

N. T.

Barnabas.

VIII. Matth. xxvi.

VIII. Ch. v. When

31. *For it is written, [viz. Zech. xiii. 7.] I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.*

I shall smite the shepherd, then the sheep of the flock shall be scattered (e) abroad.

IX. Acts x. 42.

IX. Ch. vii. If *Acta*

That it is he which therefore the Son of

D 2

is

(e) See *Jones*, as before, p. 22. 23.

A. D. ^{71.} is ordained of God to be the judge of quick and dead. God, who is the Lord of all, and (g) shall judge the quick and

2 Tim. iv. 1. I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who (f) shall judge the quick and the dead. the dead, hath suffered,

1 Pet. iv. 5. Who shall give an account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.

It is not possible to say, what text he refers to, though that in *Timothie* has the same words. But perhaps there is no proof, that he refers to any. This was an article well-known to every common Christian: whereas this writer (whoever he be) was able to teach the Christian Religion, and that without respect to any written Gospels or Epistles.

N. T.

Barnabas.

Romans.

X. Rom. ix. 10. And not only this, but when Re- X. Ch. xiii. Barnabas argues, that the followers of Jesus are

(f) τῶ μέλλοντι κρίνειν
ζῶντας καὶ νεκρούς.

(g) καὶ μέλλοντι κρίνειν
ζῶντας καὶ νεκρούς.

Ch.
bekal
by o
fathe
chila
born
unto
shall

Ch. I. St. BARNABAS.

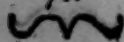
37

A. D.

71.

Rebekah had conceived by one, even by our father Isaac (for the children not being yet born—) it was said unto her: The elder shall serve the younger.

the people of God. "But let us enquire, says he, whether this people be the heir, or the former: and whether the covenant belong to us, or to them. Hear then concerning the people, what the scripture says: *Isaac* prayed for his wife *Rebekah*, because she was barren, and she conceived. Afterwards *Rebekah* went forth to enquire of the Lord. And the Lord said unto her: *There are two nations in thy womb, and two people shall come from thy body. And the one people shall prevail above the other people; and the elder son shall serve the younger.* [Gen. xxv. 23.] You ought to consider, who



St. BARNABAS. Book I.

Rom. iv. 3. *For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness. V. 16. Therefore it is of faith — to the end, that the promise might be sure to all the seed, not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all (as it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations.) &c.*

St. Paul's argument, Gal. iv. 22 — 31. might be compared with these arguments of Barnabas, especially the former of them. But I do not suppose, these passages contain a

who is *Isaac*, and who *Rebekah*: and of whom it was declared, that this people should be greater than that. — You see of whom he appointed it, to be this first people, and heir of the covenant." Afterwards in the same chapter: "What then saith he to *Abraham*, when upon believing he was placed in righteousness? Behold, *I have made thee a father of many nations*, which without circumcision believe in the Lord." Gen. xvii. 4. 5.

re-

Ch.

refer
they

X

For
throu
him

B
of S
thin
The
and

X
Kno
are
and
God

(b)
Te, 2

Ch. I. St. BARNABAS.

39

reference to any of St. Paul's epistles, though they greatly illustrate them.

A. D.

71.

N. T.

Barnabas.

XI. Rom. xi. 36.

For of him, and (b) through him, and to him are all things.

XI. Ch. xii. Bar-

nabas having spoken of the directions given by Moses to the Israelites in the wilderness, to look to the brazen serpent, says: "You (i) have in this also the glory of Jesus: forasmuch as in him are all things, and to him."—

But though here are words resembling those of St. Paul, Rom. xi. there is no reason to think, *Barnabas* has any respect to them. They are used by him in a different sense, and on another account.

N. T.

Barnabas.

XII. 1 Cor. iii. 16.

Know ye not, that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you.

XII. Ch. vi. For, 1 Corinth.

my brethren, the habitation of our heart is an holy temple to the Lord,

D 4

XIII.

(b) ὅτι ἐξ αὐτοῦ, καὶ δι' αὐτοῦ, καὶ εἰς αὐτὸν τὰ πάντα.

(i) ὅτι ἐν αὐτῷ τὰ πάντα, καὶ εἰς αὐτόν.

A. D. XIII. I Cor. xi.

71.
 20. *When (k) ye come together into one place, this is not to eat the Lord's supper.*

2 Corinth. XIV. 2 Cor. v. 17.

If any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away: behold, all things are become new.

I Pet. ii. 5. *Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house.*

Ephes.

XV. Eph. v. 16. 17. *Redeeming the time, because the days are evil. Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding, what the mind of the Lord*

XIII. Ch. iv. But

(l) coming together into one place, enquire what is fitting and profitable for the beloved in common.

XIV. Ch. xvi.

Having received the remission of our sins, and trusting in the name of the Lord, we are made new, again created afresh: Therefore God truly dwells in our house, that is, in us. — This is the spiritual temple built unto the Lord.

XV. Ch. ii. See-

ing then the days are exceeding evil, and the adversarie has the power of this present world; we ought to give diligent heed,

is

(k) Συνερχομένους ἑν ὕμῳ ἐπὶ τὸ αὐτό, κ. δ.

(l) Sed in unum convenientes, inquire.

Ch. I. St. BARNABAS,

41

is. And Eph. ii. 2. to enquire into the *A. D.*
The prince of the power righteous judgments ^{71.}
of the air, the spirit of the Lord.
that rules in the chil-
dren of disobedience.

XVI. Philip. iv. 5.
The Lord (m) is at
band.

2 Pet. iii. 20. *The*
earth also, and the
works that are therein
shall be burnt up.

Rev. xxii. 12. *Be-*
hold, I come quickly,
and my reward is with
me.

XVI. Ch. xxi. *Philip.*
The day is (n) near,
in which all things
shall be destroyed,
together with the
wicked one. The
Lord is near, and his
reward.

Some may apprehend, that there is here
a reference to some text, or texts, of the
N. T. But I think by no means. If he
alludes to any text of scripture, it is to Isai.
xl. 10. *His reward is with him, and his*
work before him : or lxii. 11. *Behold, thy sal-*
vation cometh : behold, his reward is with
him, and his work before him : as Menard has
observed upon this place of *Barnabas.*

N. T.

(m) Ὁ Κύριος ἐγγύς.

(n) Ἐγγύς γὰρ ἡμέρα ἐν ἣ
συναπολείται πάντα τῷ πονηρῷ.
Ἐγγύς ὁ κύριος, καὶ ὁ μισθὸς
αὐτοῦ.

A. D.

N. T.

Barnabas.

71.
2 Tim.

XVII. 2 Tim. i.

10. *But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who has abolished death, and brought life and immortality to light thro' the gospel.*

Rom. xv. 8. *Jesus Christ was made a minister of the circumcision, for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers.*

Hebrews.

XVIII. Heb. iii.

5. *And (o) Moses verily was faithful in all his house, as a servant. — 6. But Christ, as a son, over his own house, whose house are we.*

(o) Καὶ Μωσῆς μὲν πιστὸς—
ὡς θεράπων. — Χριστὸς δὲ. ὡς
υἱὸς ἐπὶ τὸν οἶκον αὐτοῦ, ὃ οἶκὸς
ἐσμὲν ἡμεῖς.

XVII. Ch. v. But

he, that he might abolish death, and make manifest a resurrection from the dead, because it behoved him to appear in the flesh, suffered, that he might perform the promise made unto the fathers.

XVIII. Ch. xiv.

Barnabas having observed, that Moses received from God the two tables of the commandments, written by the finger of God: but the people being

(p) Μωσῆς θεράπων αὐτὸν ἔλα-
βεν—αὐτὸς δὲ ὁ Κύριος ἡμῶν
ἔδωκεν, εἰς λαὸν κληρονομίας,
διὰ ἡμᾶς ὑπομένοντας.

(q) Μ
ἐπισυνα-
γιστῶν.

ing fallen to idolatrie, he cast them to the ground, and the tables of the covenant were broken, goes on.——“*Moses* (*p*) being a servant received them [or *it*, meaning the covenant, or testament] But the Lord himself has given them to us, the people of his inheritance, he having suffered for us.”

A. D.

71.

There does not appear to me any the least reason to suppose, that *Barnabas* has here any respect to the epistle to the *Hebrews*. He often argues like the author of that epistle, without borrowing from him.

N. T.

Barnabas.

XIX. Heb. x. 25.

XIX. Ch. iv. Do

Not (*q*) forsaking the assembling of yourselves together, as the manner of some is.

(*r*) not withdraw yourselves from others, like justified men.

XX.

(*q*) Μη ἐγκαταλείποντες τὴν ἐπισυναγωγὴν, καθὼς ἔθελον.

(*r*) Non separatim debetis seducere vos tanquam justificati.

A. D.

XX. 1 Pet. ii. 17.

XX. Ch. iv. As

71.
1 Pet.

*And if ye call on the
Father, who without
respect of persons,
judges according to
every man's work, pass
the time of your so-
journing here in fear,*

much as in us lies,
let us meditate on the
fear of God, and strive
to keep his command-
ments, that we may
rejoice in his judge-
ments. For the Lord
judges the world with-
out respect of persons.
And every one shall
receive according to
what he does.

*The sum
of his tes-
timonie.*

Thus I have put down the most (B) ma-
terial passages of *Barnabas*, which may be
supposed

(B) Note: at Ch. vii. This writer says of the *Jews*: that *they shall say: Is not this he whom we crucified, having despised him, pierced him, and mocked him.* Where he seems to apply the words of *Zech. xii. 10.* which are also applied *John, ch. xix. 37.* Mr. Jones, vol. III. p. 144. hence concludes, that he used *St. John's Gospel.* But I am not convinced by his arguments, the force of which depends very much upon his supposition, that this writer was originally a Gentile and not a *Jew.* For though the circumstance of our Saviour's being pierced at his crucifixion be related only by *St. John, v. 34.* it never was a secret, but was all along well known to the Christians of that time, before *John* wrote this Gospel. It is most manifest, (as will appear hereafter) that this writer was a perfect master of our Lord's historie, and I believe, learned men in general are satisfied, he was better acquainted with the Old Testament than Mr. Jones supposed. Beside that, *whom they have pierced,* may have been at that time the reading of the *Seventy*, as well as the *Hebrew.* See R. Simon. *Hist. Critique du text du N. T. ch. xx. p. 242. 243.*

Ch.

supp
the
be a
some
them
most
pear
origi
same
Apos
of th
And
the f

It
this
that
IV.

canno
was
had t
them,
shoul
like t
or ref

(s)
sertim S
nerum,
Ad calce
ap. Cote

supposed to contain allusions to the books of *A. D.* the New Testament, that every one may ^{71.} be able to judge for himself. But excepting some of the first numbers, I do not allege them as express quotations, or allusions. In most of these places, *Barnabas* does not appear an imitator, or copier of others, but an original author, who had in his mind the same doctrine with *Paul*, and the other Apostles. This is the idea I have formed of this epistle, from a frequent perusal of it. And some learned men have been (*s*) of much the same opinion.

It is probable, that at the writing of this epistle he had read *St. Matthew*: and that he refers to him in numbers I. II. III. IV. and perhaps at VI. and VII. But it cannot be thought strange, that a man who was contemporarie with the Apostles, and had the same spirit, and the like gifts with them, if he was not an Apostle himself, should often speak, and reason, and argue, like them, without quoting their writings, or referring to them.

XXI. Be-

(*s*) — per omnia orthodoxus, & Apostolorum, praesertim St. Pauli, vestigiis insistens: ut si non laborum & itinerum, saltem dogmatum participem ubique agnoscamus. *Ad calcem J. Armacani de Barnabae epist. praemonitionis.* ap. Cotel. p. 13. Ed. Amst. 1698.

A. D.

71.

XXI. Before we quite leave this epistle, we must take notice of a singular passage in it.

Ch. iv. "As (*t*) the Son of God says: "Let us resist all iniquity, and hate it."

Menard upon the place says: This sentence we have in none of the Gospels, but he had heard it from Christ, or some one of his disciples. It is like that passage of St. Paul: Acts xx. 35. *And to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said: It is more blessed to give, than to receive.*

XXII. And this passage may lead us to one observation more; that I do not in this epistle perceive any quotations or references to Apocryphal Gospels. Nor do I at present recollect, that the learned men, who have so diligently collected the passages of those Gospels, have suspected any quotations of them in this epistle, beside this last mentioned passage, and that at number I. And I think it without reason, that they have suspected these: It being no uncommon thing for writers to report the sense of a text or saying, without representing their very words. Or, as the same *Menard* upon that place

(*t*) C. 4. Sicut dicit filius Dei: resistamus omni iniquitati, et odio habeamus eam.

Ch. I. St. BARNABAS.

47

place says: "He (u) there alleges not any
 " one particular text of the Gospel, but ex-
 " presses the sense of many of Christ's say-
 " ings, concerning the necessity of enduring
 " tribulations for the sake of eternal life: as
 " *strait is the gate: He that will come after*
 " *me* — and the like, which occur fre-
 " quently in the Gospels."

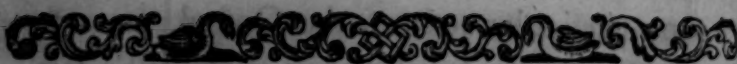
A. D.

71.

(u) Sic inquit, nempe *Jesus*. Non profertur hic certus
 aliquis Evangelii locus, sed sensus multorum *Christi* dictorum,
 de tribulationibus perferendis ab eis qui sunt aeternae vitae
 studiosi. ut arcta via est, quae ducit ad vitam; qui vult ve-
 nire post me, &c. Et similia, quae passim in Evangelio re-
 perire est. *Menard. ad cap. vii. See likewise Jones, as be-*
fore, vol. i. p. 518. 519.



CHAP.



CHAP. II.

St. CLEMENT.

His Historie.

A. D.
96.

THE next piece, which I am to quote, is the epistle of *Clement*, Bishop of *Rome*, to the church of *Corinth*: whom ancient writers, without any doubt or scruple, relate to have been the same *Clement*, whom *St. Paul* mentions among his fellow-laborers, whose names are in the book of life. *Philip*. iv. 3. The epistle is writ in the name of the whole church of *Rome* to the church of *Corinth*. And therefore it is called at one time the epistle of *Clement*, and at another the epistle of the *Romans*, to the *Corinthians*. The main design of it is to compose some dissensions, which there were in the church of *Corinth* about their spiritual guides and governours. Which dissensions seem to have been raised by a few turbulent and selfish men among them. Upon this occasion *Clement* recommends not only concord

Ch.

cord a
military
and d
of Re
ple.

an use
And
all the
there

auscrip
one a
For w
correct
compar

It l
these m
ge; f
the tim

(a) A

πρεσβυ

(A) P

he says,

One is,

High-F

more

openly bla

τι ἀρχιε

ων, ἔδ

Οὐ μὲν

uē. Cod.

s a Socin

apt to cen

hodoxhie

Ch. II. St. CLEMENT.

49°

A. D.

96.

cord and harmonie, but love in general, humility, and all the virtues of a good life, and divers of the great articles and principles of Religion. The (a) stile is clear and simple. It is called by the ancients an excellent, an useful, a great and admirable (A) epistle. And the epistle still in our hands deserves all these commendations: though not entire, there being some pages wanting in the manuscript of it; and though we have but one ancient manuscript of it remaining. For which reason it cannot be altogether so correct, as if we had a number of copies to compare together.

It being of considerable importance in these most early writings, to settle their true age; somewhat must be observed concerning the time, when this epistle was writ.

E

The

(a) Ἀπλῆς δὲ κατὰ φράσιν καὶ ἐγγύς τῆ ἐκκλησιαστικῆ καὶ περιέργῃ χαρὰ κληρῶν. Phot. Cod. 126.

(A) Photius commends the epistle in the main. But still he says, "There are in it several things liable to censure. One is, that the writer, though he calls our Lord our High-Priest and Patron, gives him none of the higher and more divine titles. However he does not any where openly blaspheme him. Αἰτιάται δ' ἂν τις ἐν ταύταις—τι ἀρχιερεὶα καὶ προσάτην τὸν κύριον ἡμῶν ἰσοῦν χριστὸν ἐξονομάζων, ὅς δὲ τὰς θεοπροπείας καὶ ὑψηλότερας ἀφῆκε περὶ αὐτοῦ φανείας. Οὐ μὲν ἔδ' ἀπαρακαλύπτως αὐτὸν ὁδομαίῃ ἐν τέτοις βλασφημίαι. Cod. 126. p. 306. That is, in modern language, it is a Socinian epistle. So, upon many occasions, Photius is apt to censure ancient writers, who come not up to the orthodoxy of his time.

A. D.

96.

The succession of the first Bishops of Rome lies at present in some uncertainty and obscurity. Bishop (b) *Pearson* supposes, that *Clement* was Bishop of Rome from the year of our Lord 69. or 70. to the year 83. the second of *Domitian*: (c) *Pagi*, that *Clement* succeeded *Linus* in 61. and sat in the See of Rome till 77. when he abdicated, and died long after a martyr in the year 100. Those learned men, who place the Bishoprick of *Clement* so early, or that suppose he might write this epistle before he was Bishop, (as *Dodwell*) usually place it before the destruction of *Jerusalem*. The Archbishop of *Canterburie* (d) concludes, that this epistle was written shortly after the end of the persecution under *Nero*, between the 64. and the 70. year of Christ. *Le Clerc* (e) places it in the year 69. and *Dodwell* (f) in 64. *Du Pin*, *Tillemont*, and others (g) think, he was not Bishop till the year 91. or 93. This is the more common opinion, and is agreeable

(b) *Opera Post.* p. 172. (c) *Crit. A. D.* 100. N. 2.

(d) See his Discourse prefixed to the genuine Epistles of the Apostolical Fathers, p. 12.

(e) *Hist. Ec. A. D.* 69. N. vi.(f) *Disserta. sing. de Rom. Pont. success.* c. xi. p. 153.(g) *Vid. Cotelerii judicium de priore S. Clem. Ep. apud Patres Ap. T. i. p. 141.* Of this opinion was Dr. Cave, when he wrote his *Apostolici*, *vid. Life of St. Clement*, §. iv. but altered it afterwards. *Vid. Hist. Lit. Clemens.*to the
others,I sh
epistle

ancien

Firs

And t

calami

them,

the Cor

of the

after s

of it;

64. o

next p

was w

that o

passage

imate

cession

by the

cannot

to

out of

by the

by othe

whole

long ti

(b) M

Ch. II. St. CLEMENT.

51

A. D.
96.

to the sentiments of *Irenæus*, *Eusebe*, and others, the most ancient Christian writers.

I shall observe some notes of time in the epistle itself, and then the testimones of the ancients.

First, Of notes of time in the epistle itself. And the *Romans* begin with saying, that *the calamities and afflictions, which had befallen them, had somewhat retarded their answering the Corinthians to those things they had enquired of them.* This letter therefore was writ soon after some persecution, or at the conclusion of it; either the persecution of *Nero* about 64. or that of *Domitian* in 94. or 95. the next persecutor of the Church. But that it was writ after the later, and not so soon as that of *Nero*, may be argued from divers passages. In the 44. ch. *Clement* seems to intimate, that there had then been some successions in the church, since those appointed by the Apostles: For he says, *Wherefore we cannot think, that those may be justly thrown out of their ministrie, who were either appointed by them, [the Apostles] or afterwards chosen by other eminent men, with the consent of the whole church, — and have been (b) for a long time commended by all.* In the 47. chap-

E 2

ter

(b) Μεμαρτυρημένους τε πολλοῖς χρόνοις ὑπὸ πάντων.

A. D. ^{96.} ter he bids the *Corinthians* take into their hands the epistle of *Paul*, writ to them in the (i) *begining of the gospel*: And in the same chapter he calls the church of *Corinth* an (k) *ancient Church*. I know indeed, that learned men, who are for the more early date of this epistle, endeavor to evade the force of the argument taken from these two last expressions: But I think, it cannot be done without some violence to them.

There is indeed a passage in the 41. chapter, from whence it is argued, that the temple at *Jerusalem* must have been standing, when *Clement* wrote: Because he speaks in the present tense concerning the sacrifices of the *Mosaic law*: That (l) *the sacrifices are not offered every where, but only at Jerusalem*. But I am surprized, so many learned men should have insisted on this argument. *Josephus*, in his *Antiquities*, not finished before the year 93. continually speaks in the present tense, when he gives an account of the several kinds of sacrifices appointed by the law. “ A private (m) person, says he, when

(i) Ἐν ἀρχῇ τῆς εὐαγγελίας ἔγραψεν.

(k) Ἀρχαίαν Κορινθίων ἐκκλησίαν.

(l) Οὐ πανταχῶς προσφέρειναι θυσίας, κ. λ.

(m) Ἀνὴρ ἰδιώτης ὁλοκαυτᾶν, θύει μὲν βῆν, καὶ ἀρνίον, καὶ ξριζον — σφαγέων δὲ τέτων, τὸν κύκλον τῶ ἀμῶσι δέουσι το βαμῶ

he b
an
the
bloo
ing
bers
lay
all me
this w
that w
the w
us (n)
concer
In
ancien
but n
but al
occasi
Ire
“ Ap
“ and
“ del

βαμῶ δι
τες ἀλσ
§ 1. v
(n) S
oblation
que, t
queat;
Ep. Cl
(o) C

“ he brings a whole burnt-offering, sacrifices
 “ an ox, and a lamb, and a kid. When
 “ these are slain, the priests pour out the
 “ blood round about the altar. Then hav-
 “ ing washed them, they divide the mem-
 “ bers, and having sprinkled them with salt,
 “ lay them on the altar, &c.” By which
 all men will understand no more, than that
 this was the appointment of the law: and
 that when sacrifices were brought, this was
 the way of offering them. And, as *Cotelerius*
(n) observēs, the same stile may be used
 concerning the same matter to this very day.

In the next place, I shall put down some
 ancient testimonies concerning this epistle,
 but not barely to ascertain the time of it,
 but also to represent the value of it, and it's
 occasion, design and argument.

Irenæus says, “ When *(o)* the blessed
 “ Apostles [*Peter* and *Paul*] had founded
 “ and established the church, [at *Rome*] they
 “ delivered the office of the Bishoprick in

E 3

“ it

βαμὴ δι' ἱερῆς, ἔστα καθαρτοποιήσαντες διαμελίζουσι, καὶ πᾶσαν-
 τες ἀλσιν ἐπὶ τὸν βαμὸν ἀνατίθεασι. κ. λ. *Antiq. l. iii. c. 9.*
 § 1. *vid. E § 2. 3.*

(n) Sed Clemens, inquit viri doctissimi, meminit, Cap. 41.
 oblationum in templo. Quidni meminisset? cum nunc quo-
 que, tot elapsis seculis, par mentio idemque sermo haberi
 queat; quemadmodum legenti patebit. *Judicium de priore*
Ep. Clement. ubi supra. p. 141.

(o) *Con, Har, l. iii. c. 3. et apud Euseb. H. E. l. v. c. 6.*

A. D.

96.

“ it to *Linus*. Of this *Linus Paul* makes
 “ mention in his epistles to *Timothie*. [2 *Tim*,
 “ iv. 21.] To him succeeded *Anencletus*,
 “ After whom, in the third place after the
 “ Apostles, *Clement* obtained that Bishop-
 “ rick, who had seen the blessed Apostles,
 “ and conversed with them: who had the
 “ preaching of the Apostles still sounding
 “ in his ears, and their traditions before his
 “ eyes. Nor he alone, for there were then
 “ still many alive, who had (B) been taught
 “ by the Apostles. In the time therefore
 “ of this *Clement*, when there was no small
 “ dissension among the brethren at *Corinth*,
 “ the church at *Rome* sent a most excellent
 “ letter to the *Corinthians*, persuading them
 “ to peace among themselves, &c.

Thus *Irenæus* makes *Clement* the third in
 succession after the Apostles. In like manner
Eusebe. “ In (p) the second of whose reign
 “ [that is, of *Titus*, and according to *Eusebe*’s
 “ account, A. D. 79.] *Linus* Bishop

“ of

(E) It is plain from these several observations of *Irenæus*,
 that he had not the least suspicion, this epistle was writ before
 the destruction of *Jerusalem*; but when all, or most of the
 Apostles, had been for some time dead. Nor would it have
 been worth observing, that in the year 70. there were many
 living, beside *Clement*, who had been taught by the Apostles:
 at which time it would be strange, not to suppose a great part
 of them still alive.

(p) *Euf. H. E. l. iii. c. 13.*

“ of th
 “ had
 “ to A
 “ of t
 “ *Ane*
 “ chu
 “ ceed
 “ men
 “ Ch.
 “ ther
 “ a g
 “ fro
 “ chu
 “ a d
 “ An
 “ for
 “ ny
 “ a f
 “ th
 “ m
 “ far
 “ Cl
 “ w
 “ te
 “ fir
 he (

(g)
 (s)

“ of the church of the *Romans*, when he
 “ had governed it twelve years, delivered it
 “ to *Anencletus*.—In (q) the twelfth year
 “ of this reign, [*Domitian's*, A. D. 92.]
 “ *Anencletus* having been Bishop of the
 “ church of *Rome* twelve years, was suc-
 “ ceeded by *Clement*, whom the Apostle
 “ mentions in his epistle to the *Philippians*.
 “ Ch. iv. 3.” Again, “ Of this (r) *Clement*
 “ there is one epistle acknowledged by all,
 “ a great and admirable epistle, which as
 “ from the church of *Rome* he wrote to the
 “ church of the *Corinthians*, on occasion of
 “ a dissension that there was then at *Corinth*.
 “ And we know that this epistle has been
 “ formerly, and is still publicly read in ma-
 “ ny churches. Farthermore, *Hegesippus* is
 “ a sufficient witness of the dissension which
 “ there was at *Corinth* in the time of *Cle-*
 “ *ment*.” In another place: “ At (s) the
 “ same time [beginning of *Trajan's* reign]
 “ *Clement* still governed the church of *Rome*,
 “ who was the third in that succession, af-
 “ ter *Paul* and *Peter*. For *Linus* was the
 “ first, and after him *Anencletus*.” And
 he (t) afterwards says, that *Clement* died in

E 4

the

(q) *Euf. H. E. l. 3. c. 15.*(r) *Ibid. c. 16.*(s) *Ib. c. 21.*(t) *Ib. c. 34.*

A. D. the third year of *Trajan*, [that is, *A. D.*
 96.] having been Bishop nine years. Far-
 ther: (u) — “ And the epistle of *Clement*
 “ acknowledged by all, which he wrote to
 “ the *Corinthians*, in the name of the church
 “ of *Rome*. In (x) which inserting many
 “ sentiments of the epistle to the *Hebrews*,
 “ and also using some of the very words of
 “ it, he plainly manifests that epistle [to
 “ the *Hebrews*] to be no modern piece.
 “ And hence it has been not without rea-
 “ son reckoned among the other writings
 “ of the Apostle. For *Paul* having writ to
 “ the *Hebrews* in their own tongue, some
 “ think the Evangelist *Luke*, others, that
 “ this very *Clement* translated it: [into *Greek*:]
 “ which last is the most likely, since there
 “ is a great resemblance between the stile
 “ of the epistle of *Clement*, and the epistle
 “ to the *Hebrews*; as well as between the
 “ sentiments of those writings. It ought to
 “ be observed, that there is another epistle
 “ said to be *Clement*’s. But this is not so
 “ generally received as the former: nor do
 “ we know the ancients to have quoted it.
 “ There

(u) *Euf. H. E. l. iii. c. 38.*

(x) Ἐν ἡ τῆς πρὸς Ἑβραίους πολλὰ νοήματα παραθεῖς, ἥδη δὲ
 καὶ ἀνολοεῖται ῥητοῖς τισὶν ἐξ αὐτῆς χρῆσάμενος, κ. λ.

“ There have been also published not long
 “ since other large and prolix writings in
 “ his name, containing dialogues of *Peter*
 “ and *Apion*: of which there is not the least
 “ mention made by the ancients. Nor have
 “ they the pure apostolical doctrine.” To
 add but one place more: speaking of *Dionysius*,
Bishop of Corinth, about 170. *Eusebe*
 observes from this epistle to the church of
Rome addressed to *Soter* their Bishop at that
 time: “ That (y) in his epistle *Dionysius*
 “ makes mention also of the epistle of *Cle-*
 “ *ment* to the *Corinthians*, testifying, that it
 “ had been wont to be read there in the
 “ church from ancient time, saying, *To day*
 “ *we have kept the holy Lord's-day, in which*
 “ *we read your epistle: which we shall con-*
 “ *tinually read for our instruction, as well as*
 “ *the former writ to us by Clement.*

With *Eusebe*, *St. Jerome* (though a *Latin*)
 agrees in his book (z) of *Illustrious Men*:
 “ *Clement* of whom the Apostle *Paul* writes
 “ in his epistle to the *Philippians* [Ch. iv. 3.]
 “ the (a) fourth Bishop of *Rome* after *Peter*,
 “ for as much as *Linus* was the second,
 “ *Anacletus* the third, (though most of the
 “ *Latins*

(y) *Euseb. H. E. l. 4. c. 23. p. 145. B. C.*

(z) *Cap. 15. (a) He reckons St. Peter for the first.*

A. D.

96.

“ *Latins* think *Clement* to have been the second after the Apostle *Peter*,) wrote a very useful epistle in the name of the church of *Rome* to the church of *Corinth*, which in some places is read publicly.” He goes on to observe, as *Eusebe* had done before, it’s agreement with the epistle to the *Hebrews*. And then adds: “ There is also a second epistle with his name, but it is rejected by the ancients, and a long dialogue of *Peter* and *Apion*, which *Eusebe* has censured in the third book of his *Ecclesiastical Historie*. He died in the third year of *Trajan* :” that is, A. D. 100.

All these testimonies agree together, and they are the most valuable we can have. It was indeed the more common opinion of the *Latins*, as *Jerome* owns, that *Clement* was next after *Peter*, but he does not follow them. And we find (b) *Tertullian* the most ancient *Latin* Father remaining, though not so ancient as *Irenæus*, saying that *Clement* was ordained by *Peter*. To which, I think, it may be a sufficient answer to say, that *Tertullian* might be mistaken in this; and that the testimonie of *Irenæus*, confirmed by *Eusebe*,

(b) Sicut Romanorum Clementem, a Petro ordinatum. De Præscr. c. 32.

Eusebe
if it
other
be fa
by P
Rome
to for
I thi
of T
dina
the
offic
conc
ment
to b
he c
(c)
orda
exer
of I
ject
epist
than
diti
I a
the
mig

Eusebe, is much more valuable than his. But if it be needful to reconcile *Tertullian* with others, this also may be done. For it may be said, that though *Clement* was ordained by *Peter*; it was not to the Bishoprick of *Rome*, or any other office in the church, but to some service of the gospel elsewhere. But I think, that is not agreeable to the words of *Tertullian*: which plainly intend an ordination in the church of *Rome*, either to the Bishoprick of that church, or some other office in it. There is another way of reconciling this matter, by saying, that *Clement* was ordained, or appointed by *Peter*, to be Bishop in the church of *Rome*, but he declined it for some reason. *Epiphanius* (c) has a conjecture, that though he was ordained Bishop by *Peter*, he declined the exercise of that charge, till after the death of *Linus* and *Cletus*: and he builds that conjecture upon a passage of *Clement* in this very epistle, Ch. liv. *Who is there among you, that has any charity? let him say, if this sedition, if this contention, be upon my account; I am ready to depart, I go away — only let the flock of Christ be in peace.* And thus he might have practised what he here recommends.

(c) *Har.* 27. c. 6.

A. D. ^{96.} mends. And *Epiphanius* says likewise, that this is related in some writings he had seen. But though we cannot be certain of this, yet I think it best to follow those testimonies I have first produced: according to which, his Bishoprick of *Rome* must have commenced in the year 91. or 92. and the epistle was writ at the later end of the reign of *Domitian*, in 95. or rather 96.

As for the opinion, that this epistle was writ by him, after he had resigned, and in a supposed banishment, it hardly deserves any consideration: it being plainly confuted by the epistle itself, which appears to be writ from *Rome* in the name of the church there, after some troubles, or when they were abated. And they desire the speedy return of the three brethren, whom they sent with it to *Corinth*. *The messengers*, say they at the end of the epistle, *whom we have sent unto you, Claudius Ephebus, and Valerius Bito, with Fortunatus, send back to us again with all speed — that they may the sooner acquaint us with your peace and concord.*

Upon the whole I think, this epistle was writ by *Clement*, when Bishop, at the end of *Domitian's* persecution, in the year 96.

The

The
ently f
and of
and al
ment t
shall t
the C
piece,
his sec
account
extra

Ind
by m
thoug
to ow
spurio
observ
Bisho
make
ment
gen,
any
who
and
the c
of it.

(d)
(e)

The passages I have quoted have sufficiently shewn, not only the age of *Clement*,
 and of this epistle, but the character of it,
 and also, that this is the only piece of *Clement* that can be relied on as (d) genuine. I shall therefore be excused, if I do not quote the *Constitutions*, *Recognitions*, or any other piece, as his: No, not that which is called his second epistle: though I shall give some account of it, after I have put down my extracts out of this.

A. D.

96.

Indeed the second epistle might be shewn by many arguments not to be genuine, though some learned men have been willing to own it as such. It is expressly rejected as spurious by (e) *Photius*. *Grabe* (f) has well observed, that the forementioned *Dionysius*, Bishop of *Corinth* in the second centurie, makes mention of but one epistle of *Clement*: That *Clement* of *Alexandria* and *Origen*, who have quoted the first, never take any notice of the second: Nor yet *Irenæus*, who has so particularly mentioned the first, and could not well have omitted to mention the other also, if he had known any thing of it. From all which *Grabe* concludes with great

(d) *Vid. Phot. Cod.* 112. 113. & 126.(e) *Cod.* 113. (f) *Spicil. P. i. p.* 266—269.

A. D. 96. great probability, that this piece was not written before the middle of the third century.

I would only farther observe, that some have supposed, our *Clement* to have been of the familie of the *Cesars*, and to have suffered martyrdom. But both these suppositions seem to be originally owing to a confounding him with *Flavius Clemens*, the Consul: who was a near relation of *Domitian*, and was also put to death by him for Christianity. That *Clement* was no martyr, is fairly concluded from the silence of *Irenæus*, *Tertullian*, *Eusebe* and others: who could not have omitted this, if there had been any ground for it.

Books of the New Testament expressly quoted by St. Clement.

In this epistle there is but one book of the New Testament expressly named, which is the first epistle of *St. Paul* to the *Corinthians*.

N. T.

Clement.

1 Corinth. I. 1 Cor. i. 12. Now I. Ch. xlvii. Take
this I say, that every (g) into your hands
one

(g) Αναλάβετε τὴν ἐπιστολὴν τῷ μακαρίῳ Πάυλῳ τῷ Ἀποστόλῳ· τί πρῶτον ὑμῖν ἐν ἀρχῇ τῆς εὐαγγελίας ἔγραψεν; ἐπ' ἀληθείας πνευματικῶς ἐπέσειλεν ὑμῖν, περὶ αὐτοῦ τε, καὶ Κηφᾶ τε, καὶ Ἀπόλλω. κ. λ.

one of
of Paul
pollos, a
and I

St.
Corint
it was
not ob
for th
Corint
says,
the Sp

II.
Thus
Let n
glory
&c, C

*one of you saith, I am
of Paul, and I of A-
pollos, and I of Cephas,
and I of Christ.*

the epistle of the
blessed Paul the A-
postle. What did he
at the first write to
you in the begining
of the gospel? Ve-
rily he did by the
Spirit admonish you
concerning himself,
and Cephas and Apol-
los, because that even
then you did form
parties.

A. D.
96.

St. Clement here quotes this epistle to the
Corinthians themselves: to whom, he says,
it was written by the Apostle Paul. I need
not observe, how strong an argument this is
for the genuinenesse of the first epistle to the
Corinthians, which we now have. And he
says, Paul wrote, and admonished them by
the Spirit: or, as in the original, *spiritually*.

Quotations and Allusions.

N. T.

Clement.

II. Jer. ix. 23. 24.

II. Ch. xiii. And Gospels.

*Thus saith the Lord:
Let not the wise man
glory in his wisdom,
&c. Comp. 1 Cor. i. 31.*

let us do as it is writ-
en. For thus saith
the holy Spirit: *Let
not the wise man glory*
Luke

A. D.

Luke vi. 36. Be in his wisdom. —

96.

ye therefore (b) merciful, as your Father also is merciful, V. 37. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: 38. Give, and it shall be given unto you: good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal, it shall be measured to you again.

(i) especially remember the words of the Lord Jesus, which he spake, teaching gentleness and long-suffering. For thus he said: Be ye merciful, that ye may obtain mercy: forgive, that it may be forgiven unto you. As you do, so shall it be done unto you: as you give, so shall it be given unto you: as ye judge, so shall ye be judged: as ye shew kindness, so shall kindness be shewn unto you: with what measure ye mete, with

Matth.

(b) Γίνεσθε ὡς οὐκ ἰσχυμένοι, καθὼς καὶ ὁ πατήρ ὑμῶν οὐκ ἰσχυμὸν ἐστίν. — Δίδοτε, καὶ δοθήσεται ὑμῖν — τῷ γὰρ αὐτῷ μέτρῳ ᾧ μέρετε, ἀντιμετρηθήσεται ὑμῖν.

(i) Μάλιστα μεμνημένοι τῶν λόγων τοῦ κυρίου Ἰησοῦ ἐκτελέετε. — Οὕτως γὰρ εἶπεν· Ἐλεῖτε ἵνα ἐλεηθῆτε, ἀφίετε ἵνα ἀφεθῇ ὑμῖν ὡς ποιεῖτε, ἕτω ποιηθήσεται ὑμῖν ὡς δίδετε, οὕτως δοθήσεται ὑμῖν ὡς χρηστεύετε, οὕτως χρηστευθήσεται ὑμῖν ᾧ μερῶν μερεῖτε, ἐν αὐτῷ μετρηθήσεται ὑμῖν.

Matt

not, tha

ed. 2.

judgem

shall b

with w

mete, i

sured

ver. 12

things

would

do unto

so to th

Thi

was p

ed by

a text

by the

more

which

III

24. I

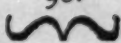
man,

son of

It ha

that

not be

Matth. vii. 1. Judge *the same shall it be* ^{A. D.}
 not, that ye be not judg- ^{96.} measured to you. By 
 ed. 2. For with what this command, and
 judgement ye judge, ye by these rules let us
 shall be judged: and establiſh ourſelves,
 with what meaſure ye that we may always
 mete, it ſhall be mea- walk obediently to
 ſured to you again. his holy words.
 ver. 12. Therefore all
 things whatſoever ye
 would that men ſhould
 do unto you: do ye even
 ſo to them.

This paſſage ſhews the great reſpect, which
 was paid to the words of *Chriſt*, [as record-
 ed by the Evangelists,] ſince having quoted
 a text of the Old Teſtament, as dictated
 by the Holy Spirit; he yet demands a ſtill
 more eſpecial regard to the words of *Chriſt*,
 which there follow.

N. T.

Clement.

III. Matth. xxvi.

III. Ch. xlv. Re-*Gospels*.

24. But wo to that member the words
 man, by whom the of the Lord Jeſus.
 ſon of man is betrayed: For he ſaid: *Wo to*
that man. [by whom
 It had been good for offenses come.] *It were*
 that man, if he had better for him, that he
 not been born.

F

Matth.

A. D.

96.

Matth. xviii. 6. *But whoſo ſhall offend one of theſe little ones which believe in me; it were better for him, that a millſtone were hanged about his neck, and that he were caſt into the ſea.*

Mark ix. 42. *And whoſoever ſhall offend one of theſe little ones, that believe in me, it is better for him, that a millſtone were hanged about his neck, and he were caſt into the ſea.*

Luke xvii. 2. *It were better for him, that a millſtone were hanged about his neck, and he caſt into the ſea, then that he ſhould offend one of theſe little ones.*

Here is however one difficulty. And it is a difficulty, which may frequently occur, whiſt

had not been born, than that he ſhould offend one of my elect. It were better for him, that a millſtone ſhould be tied about his neck, and that he ſhould be drowned in the ſea, than that he ſhould offend one of my little ones.

I have put down on the other ſide the words of ſeveral Evangelists, that every one may the better judge: but it is generally ſuppoſed, that the later part of this paſſage refers to Luke xvii. 2.

Ch.

whil
ters,
ſtles,
our I
quain
hitor
leſs t
expre
is, w
to wo
whetl
of Ch
heard
ear w
his Di
nion,
of ou
the C

(c) C
am, ſed
mores e
feſtò vid
Corinth
vi. 36.
eodem p
xxvi. 24
tamen h
quoque
loca in u
quin reſp
quorum

Ch. II. St. CLEMENT.

67

A. D.

96.

whilst we are considering these very early writers, who were conversant with the Apostles, and others, who had seen and heard our Lord: and were in a manner as well acquainted with our Saviour's doctrine and historie as the Evangelists themselves; unless their quotations or allusions are very express and clear. The question then here is, whether *Clement* in these places refers to words of Christ written and recorded; or whether he reminds the *Corinthians* of words of Christ, which he and they might have heard from the Apostles, or other eye and ear witnesses of our Lord. *Le Clerc* (c) in his Dissertation on the four Gospels is of opinion, that *Clement* refers to written words of our Lord, which were in the hands of the *Corinthians*, and well known to them.

F 2

On

(c) Clemens quidem non laudat nomine ullum Evangelistam, sed bis λόγους sermones Jesu Christi, quorum jubet memores esse Corinthios. Cap. xiii. & Cap. xlvi. Quae manifestò videntur respicere ad scriptos sermones, eosque manibus Corinthiorum vulgo tritos. Ac sane prior locus exstat Luc. vi. 36. 37. et 38. quamvis non totidem prorsus verbis, sed eodem planè sensu. Posteriora vero verba leguntur Matth. xxvi. 24. Marc. ix. 42. Luc. xvii. 2. Matth. xviii. 6. Fateor tamen hic etiam sensum potissimum respici. Sed sic solent quoque Apostoli passim laudare Vetus Testamentum, et varia loca in unam orationem conjungere: nec tamen dubium est, quin respiciant ad libros sacros, quos etiamnum habemus, et quorum sacrosancta dudum erat auctoritas. *Dissert. iii. p. 542. a.*

A. D. On the other hand, I find, Bishop *Pearson*
 96. *(d)* thought, that *Clement* speaks of words
 which he had heard from the Apostles them-
 selves, or their disciples.

I certainly make no question, but the
 three first Gospels were writ before this time.
 And I am well satisfied, that *Clement* might
 refer to our written Gospels, though he does
 not exactly agree with them in expression.
 But whether he does refer to them, is not
 easie to determine, concerning a man, who
 very probably knew these things before they
 were committed to writing: and even after
 they were so, might continue to speak of
 them, in the same manner he had been wont
 to do, as things he was well informed of,
 without appealing to the scriptures them-
 selves. However either way he by these pas-
 sages greatly confirms the truth of our Gos-
 pels. If he be supposed to refer to them,
 the case is clear. If the words are spoken
 of, as what he had received from the Apo-
 stles or others, he confirms our Gospels, for-
 asmuch as these words are agreeable to those
 which are there recorded: and he speaks of
 them,

(d) Cum veritati magis mihi consonum videatur ab Aposto-
 lis ipsis, aut eorum discipulis haec accepisse Clementem.

I have not room for his whole argument, which is in
Vindic. Ignat. Part. 2. cap. ix.

them, as certain and well known; both to himself, and the *Corinthians* of that time. We are therefore assured by *Clement*, that our Evangelists have truly and justly recorded the words of Christ, which he spake, *teaching gentlenesse and long-suffering*, and that they are worthie to be remembred with the highest respect.

A. D.
96.

But though here is a difficulty, yet I suppose, most learned men may be of that opinion, which I have spoken of as *Le Clerc's*. Indeed when *St. Paul* exhorts some in a like manner, *Acts xx. 35. To remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said, It is more blessed to give than to receive*: I believe, it is generally reckoned, he refers them not to any writing, but only to some words of Christ, of which he and they were well informed. But nevertheless, it does not follow, that this form of reference ought always to be so understood. It may be as well used to refer to written, as to unwritten words of the Lord. We shall find *Polycarp* using the same form, when he very probably, or rather certainly, refers to our written Gospels. *Remembring what the Lord said teaching*. See hereafter, in *Polycarp*, Numb. 4. and 8.

A. D.

96.

Matth.

Before we proceed any farther, we ought likewise to observe, that the learned Dr. Mill (*e*) concludes from a passage of *Irenaeus*, that *Clement* did in his manner obscurely quote *Matth.* xxv. 41. *Irenaeus* (*f*) is arguing with some heretics, and refers them to the epistle of *Clement*, “ who “ therein delivers the doctrine received from “ the Apostles, which declares, that there “ is one God Almighty, the maker of the “ heaven and the earth, — who brought “ in the flood, and called *Abraham*, — “ who spake to *Moses*, — and sent the “ Prophets, who has prepared the fire for “ the devil and his angels. That He is declared by the churches to be the Father of “ our Lord *Jesus Christ*, they who will may “ learn from the epistle itself.” And this is one of *Mill*’s arguments, that the true read-

ing

(*e*) Citavit nimirum obscurius, suo more, locum illum, *Matt.* xxv. 41. *Prolegom.* n. 140. *vid.* et n. 141. 343. 369. et ad *Matthaei* locum.

(*f*) Adnuntians quam in recenti ab Apostolis acceperat traditionem, annuntiantem unum Deum omnipotentem, factorem coeli et terrae, — qui induxerat cataclysmum, et advocaverit *Abraham*, — qui colloquutus sit *Moyfi*, — et *Prophetas* miserit, qui ignem praeparaverit diabolo et angelis ejus. Hunc Patrem Domini nostri *Jesu Christi* ab ecclesiis annuntiarum, ex ipsa scriptura, qui velint, discere possunt, et Apostolicam Ecclesiae traditionem intelligere. *Iren.* L. 3. c. 3. §. 3.

ing of
copies
and b
Fathe
angels

I r
whetl

Cleme

I may

naeus

there

ment's

was l

IV

Jerom

every

thenc

John

“ St.

“ aft

“ wr

“ Go

“ ar

“ thi

(g) S
Christu
fed in h
tis, ref
autem

ing of that text of *Matthew* is not, as in our *A. D.* copies, *everlasting fire prepared for the devil* ^{96.} *and his angels*; but *everlasting fire, which my Father has prepared for the devil and his angels.*

I must leave it to the reader to consider, whether it can be hence determined, that *Clement* did here refer to *Matthew's Gospel*. I may however say, that this passage of *Irenaeus* does deserve consideration, though there are not now any such words in *Clement's* epistle. For we have it not entire, as was before shewn.

IV. I shall here put down a passage of *St. Jerome's* *Gospels*, in his commentarie upon *Is. lii.* that every one may judge, whether it can be thence concluded, that *St. Clement* quoted *St. John's Gospel*. "Of which also, says (g) "*St. Jerome, Clement an apostolical man, who after Peter governed the church of Rome, writes to the Corinthians: The sceptre of God the Lord Jesus Christ came not with arrogance of pride, though he could do all things, but in humility: insomuch that*

F 4

"when

(g) Scribit ad Corinthios: sceptrum Dei dominus Jesus Christus, non venit in jactantia superbiae, quum possit omnia, sed in humilitate: in tantum ut verberatus a ministro sacerdotis, responderit: Si male loquutus sum, argue de peccato: si autem bene, Quid me caedis? ad *Is. c. 52. Op. T. 3, p. 382.*

A. D. "when struck by the servant of the High-

^{96.} "Priest, he answered: If I have spoken evil,
 "bear witness of the evil: But if well,
 "why smitest thou me? John xviii. 22.
 "23."

The former words, concerning *Christ's* being the sceptre of God, are in the 16. Chap. of *Clement's* epistle, and will be quoted presently under the epistle of *Paul* to the *Philippians*: But the words following, of *John* xviii. are not there. I apprehend, they never were. Nor can it be concluded, that *Jerome* himself supposed they were there: he in that place heaping texts of scripture, upon one another, without any nice order.

Mr. Jones says, (f) "That *St. Clement* appears to have cited *St. John* in §. 49. "and that he manifestly uses those words of "that Gospel, Ch. x. 15." It should be xiv. 15. The words in (g) *St. John* are: *If ye love me, keep my commandments.* In (b) *Clement*: *He that has the love that is in Christ, let him keep the precepts of Christ.* But I think, this reference to be at best doubtful. *Clement* knew very well from the public

(f) Vol. 3. p. 144.

(g) Ἐὰν ἀγαπάτε με, τὰς ἐντολὰς τὰς ἐμὰς τηρήσατέ.

(b) Ὁ ἔχων ἀγάπην ἐν Χριστῷ τηρήσάτω τὰ τῷ Χριστῷ παρὰ παραγγέλματα.

Ch. II. St. CLEMENT.

73

public instructions of the Apostles, as well ^{A. D.} as from his conversation with them, that a ^{96.} profession of love for *Christ* obliged men to keep his precepts.

N. T.

Clement.

V. Acts xiii. 22.

V. Ch. xviii. And ^{Act.}

And when he had removed him, he raised up unto them David to be their King, to whom also he gave testimonie, and said I have found David the Son of Jesse, a man after my own heart, which shall fulfil all my will.

what shall we say of David, so highly testified of? To whom God said: I have found a man after my own heart, David the son of Jesse, with holy oyl have I anointed him.

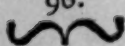
Comp. Ps. lxxxix. 20. *I have found David my servant: with my holy oyl have I anointed him. And 1 Sam. xiii. 14. The Lord has sought him a man after his own heart.*

It is true, these words are also to be found in the O. T. But they are introduced by Clement with the same, or like form of quotation, with that in the *Acts*, and the words agree very much: which may dispose one to think, he had an eye to that

VI.

A. D.

96.



VI. Acts xx. 35.

How he said: (i) It is more blessed to give, than to receive.

Romans.

VII. Rom. i. 29.

Being (l) filled with all unrighteousnesse, fornication, wickednesse, covetousnesse, maliciousnesse; full of envie, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers. 30. backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boaf-

place.

VI. Ch. ii. Ye

were all of you humble-minded (k) more willingly giving, than receiving.

VII. Ch. xxxv. Cast-

ing off (m) from us all unrighteousnesse, and iniquity, covetousnesse, debates, malignities, deceits, whisperings, backbitings, hatred of God, pride, boasting, and vain glory, and ambition. For they that do these things
ters.

(i) Μακάριόν ἐστι δίδόναι μᾶλλον ἢ λαμβάνειν.

(l) Πεπληρωμένους πάσῃ ἀδικίᾳ, πορνείᾳ, πονηρίᾳ, πλεονεξίᾳ, κακίᾳ μετὰ φόβου, φόνου, ἐριδος, δολῆς, κακοηθείας. ψιθυρίας, καταλάλους, θεοσυγείας, ὑβριδας, ὑπερηφάνους ἀλαζόνας — οἵτινες τὸ δίκαιωμα τῷ Θεῷ ἐπιγινόντες (ὅτι οἱ τὰ τοιαῦτα πράσσοντες ἄξιοι θανάτου εἰσὶν) ἔμνον αὐτὰ ποιεῖσιν, ἀλλὰ καὶ συνευδοκῶσι τοῖς πράσσουσιν.

(k) Ἡδίων δίδούλης ἢ λαμβάνουλης.

(m) Ἀπορρίψαντες ἀφ' ἑαυτῶν πᾶσαν ἀδικίαν καὶ ἀνομίαν, πλεονεξίαν, ἐρεῖς, κακοηθείας τε καὶ δόλους, ψιθυρισμὸς τε καὶ καταλαλιάς, θεοσυγίαν, ὑπερηφάνειαν τε καὶ ἀλαζονείαν, κενοδοξίαν τε καὶ φιλοκερίαν. ταῦτα γὰρ οἱ πράσσοντες συζητοῖ τῷ Θεῷ ὑπάρχειν. ἔμνον δὲ οἱ πράσσοντες αὐτὰ, ἀλλὰ καὶ οἱ συνευδοκῶντες αὐτοῖς.

ters.

ing t

God,

do ju

worth

only a

have

that

Ev

fion

Roma

origin

fente

befor

as it

of S

men

rinth

writ

all a

this

I sh

V

Wh

who

adop

ry,

ters. 32. who know- are hateful to God: A. D.
 ing the judgement of and not only they that 96.
 God, (that they which do them, but they also
 do such things are who have pleasure in
 worthy of death) not them.
 only do the same, but
 have pleasure in them
 that do them.

Every one sees, we have here the conclusion of the first chapter of the epistle to the Romans: and, as *Mill* thinks, the true and original reading. In the former part of the sentence is also a plain allusion to what goes before in that chapter. And we have here, as it seems, a plain, and undeniable, instance of St. *Clement's* alluding to the New Testament: or giving his exhortations to the *Corinthians*, in imitation of the Apostle *Paul's* writings, without confining himself exactly all along to his very words. And I hope, this will justify several other passages, which I shall allege, on account of a like allusion.

N. T.

Clement.

VIII. Rom. ix. 4.

VIII. Ch. xxxiii. If

Who are Israelites, to
 whom pertaineth the
 adoption, and the glo-
 ry, and the covenants,

any one shall consider
 them singly and dis-
 tinctly, he will ac-
 knowledge the great-
 and

A. D. ^{96.} and the giving of the law, and the service of God, and the promises. 5. Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came.

ness of the gifts given through him. [Jacob.] For from him are the Priests and the Levites, all who minister at the altar of God: From him the Lord Jesus according to the flesh.

It is hard to think, he had not here a reference to the text set on the other side.

IX. Rom. xii. 5. So we being many, are one body in Christ; and every (n) one members one of another.

IX. Ch. 46. Why — do we raise seditions against our own body? and come to such madness, as to forget, (o) that we are members one of another.

Mill * thinks, that (p) Clement refers to

(n) Οὕτως οἱ πολλοὶ ἐν σώμα ἑσμεν ἐν Χριστῷ, ὁ δὲ καθ' εἷς, ἀλλήλων μέλη.

(o) Καὶ ταρασσόμεν πρὸς τὸ σῶμα τὸ ἴδιον, καὶ εἰς τὴν αὐτὴν ἀπόνοιαν ἐρχόμεθα, ἅπερ ἐπιλαθέσθαι ἡμᾶς, ὅτι μέλη ἑσμεν ἀλλήλων.

* Vid. Mill ad Rom. xii. 13. et Proleg. n. 142.

(p) Οὕτως γὰρ ἔσαι αὐτοῖς ἑγκαρπὸν καὶ τελεία ἢ πρὸς θεόν, καὶ τὸς ἀγίους μετ' οἰκτιρμῶν χρείαν. Clem. cap. 56.

to the
that h

Him

the fa

but

disput

not k

despise

not.

which

him

xv. i

are

bear

the u

W

stimo

chur

shall

allusi

his r

his v

to

X

Let

own

quot

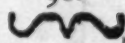
Ch. II. St. CLEMENT.

77

to the 13. ver. of the same xii. chapter, and that he had a right reading in it.

A. D.

96.



X. Rom. xiv. 1.

X. Ch. xxxviii. Let

Him that is weak in the faith receive you, but not to doubtful disputations. v. 3. Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not. And let not him which eateth not, judge him that eateth. Ch. xv. i. We then that are strong, ought to bear the infirmities of the weak.

not him that is strong despise the weak. And let the weak reverence the strong.

We have already seen Clement's express testimonie concerning the first epistle to the church of the *Corinthians*. Nevertheless I shall put down also some passages, containing allusions, or references. They will shew us his manner, and be convincing examples of his way of alluding.

N. T.

Clement.

XI. 1 Cor. x. 24.

XI. Ch. xlvi. And

1 *Corinthi*

Let no man seek his own; but every man another's wealth.

to seek what is profitable to all, and not his own things.

XII.

A. D.

96.

XII. 1 Cor. xii. 12.

For as the body is one, and has many members, and all the members of that body, being many, are one body; so also is Christ — v. 15. If the feet shall say, because I am not the head, I am not of the body: is it therefore not of the body? — v. 22. Nay much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessarie. — 24. But God has tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that part which lacked.

The allusion will appear yet more manifest, if *Clement* be compared with *St. Paul's* whole argument from v. 12. to 27.

XII. Ch. xxxvii.

The great cannot be without the little: nor the little without the great. There is a temperament in all things, and herein is a benefit. Let us, for example, take our body. The head without the feet is nothing: so neither the feet without the head. Even the smallest members of our body are necessarie, and useful to the whole body. And all conspire together, and are subject to one common use, the preservation of the whole.

N. T.

Ch. I.

XII

*Charit
and is
vaunte
not p
v. 7.
things.*

Cor

XII

*20. B
risen,
first
that s*

(B) N
p. 518.
inclusive
sarie to l
xiii. is r

Ch. II. St. CLEMENT.

79

N. T.

Clement.

A. D.

96.

XIII. 1 Cor. xiii. 4.

*Charity suffers long
and is kind: Charity
vaunteth not itself, is
not puffed up —
v. 7. beareth all
things.*

XIII. Ch. xlix.

Charity (B) endures
all things, is long-
suffering in all things.
There is nothing
base in charity, no-
thing proud. Charity
has no schism: Cha-
rity is not sediti-
ous: Charity does all
things in concord:
— without Cha-
rity nothing is ac-
ceptable to God.

Comp. ver: 1. 2. 3.

XIV. 1 Cor. xv.

*20. But now is Christ
risen, and become the
first fruits of them
that slept.*

XIV. Ch. xxiv. Let
us consider, beloved
how the Lord does
continually shew us,
that there shall be a
resurrection: of which
he has made the
Lord Jesus Christ
the first-fruits; hav-
In

(B) Note: This passage is cited by Clemens A. Strom. l. 4.
p. 518. c. where is wanting *There is nothing base to seditious,*
inclusive. But possibly he omitted these words, as not neces-
sary to be alleged. And without them the reference to 1 Cor.
xiii. is manifest.

St. CLEMENT. Book I.

ing raised him from
the dead.

In the same chapter of *Clement* follows
also an argument from seeds, resembling St.
Paul's 1 Cor. xv. 36. 37. 38.

N. T.

Clement.

2 Corinth. 2 XV. 2 Cor. iii. 18.

*We all with open face,
beholding as (q) in a
glasse the glory of the
Lord, are changed in-
to the same image.*

XVI. 2 Cor. viii.

*5. But first gave their
own-selves to the Lord,
and to us by the will
of God.*

XVII. 2 Cor. x.

17. But he that glo-

(q) Τὴν δόξαν κυρίου κα-
τοπλίζόμενα.

XV. Ch. xxxvi.

By him we shall look
up to the height of
the heavens: by him
we (r) shall behold
as in a glasse his spot-
less and most excel-
lent visage.

XVI. Ch. lvi.

Therefore let us also
pray for such as are
in any sin, that mo-
deration and humi-
lity may be given to
them; so as to yield
themselves not to us,
but to the will of
God.

XVII. Ch. xxx.

Let our praise be in
rieth,

(r) Διὰ τούτου ἐνοπλισάμεθα
τὴν ἁμωμον — ὅπως αὐτοῦ.

Ch.

*rieth,
the Lo
not be
eth him
ed, but
commen*

Rom.
*praise
but of*

XV.
*24. O
ceived*

*save one
was I
rods, on*

I or
which
because
which
whe
or to St

XIX

*Who ga
our fins,
deliver
present
cording*

rieth, let him glory in the Lord. 18. For not he that commendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth. Comp.

Rom. ii. 29. Whose praise is not of men, but of God.

XVIII. 2 Cor. xi. 24. *Of the Jews received I forty stripes save one. 25. Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned.*

I omit several passages of *Clement*, in which are words found in these two epistles; because those words are also in the O. T. which may therefore render it doubtful, whether he referred to the Old Testament, or to St. *Paul*.

N. T.

XIX. Gal. i. 4. *Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of*

God, not of ourselves. For God hates those that commend themselves.

A. D.

96.

XVIII. Ch. v. Seven times was he [*Paul*] in bonds: he was whipped, was stoned.

Clement.

XIX. Ch. xlix. For *Galat.* the love which he had for us, Christ our Lord gave his blood for us, by the will of God: his flesh
G God

A. D. God and our Father.

96.

Ephes.

XX. Eph. iv. 4.

There is one body, and
one spirit, even as ye
are called with one
hope of your calling.

5. *One Lord, one faith, one baptism.* 6.

*One God, and Father
of all.*

Philip.

XXI. Philip. i. 10.

That ye may be sincere, and without offense unto the day of Christ.

XXII. Philip. ii.

5. Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus.

6. Who being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God. 7. But made himself of no reputation, &c.

for our flesh, his soul
for our soul.

XX. Ch. xlvj

Have we not one
God, and one Christ;
and is there not one
Spirit poured out upon
us, and one calling
in Christ?

XXI. Ch. ii. Ye

were sincere, and
harmless, toward each
other, not mindful
of injuries.

XXII. Ch. xvi

For Christ is them
who are humble —
The sceptre of the
Majesty of God, our
Lord Jesus Christ
came not in the show
of pride and arro-
gance, though he
could have done so,
but in humility —

Ye see, beloved, what

XXI

That ye
walk u
Lord u
being f
ry good

XXI

v. 18.
give tha

XXV

23. And
your wh
soul, and

(s) Περι
του κυρ
και, κ. λ.

is the pattern, which ^{A. D.}
has been given to us. ^{96.}
If the Lord thus
humbled himself,
what should we do,
who are brought by
him under the yoke
of his grace?

XXIII. Col. i. 10.
*That ye (s) might
walk worthy of the
Lord unto all pleasing,
being fruitful in eve-
ry good work.*

XXIII. Ch. xxi. ^{Coloss.}
Unless (t) we order-
ing our conversation
worthily of him do
with one consent
those things which
are good and pleasing
in his sight.

XXIV. 1 Thess.
v. 18. *In every thing
give thanks.*

XXIV. Ch. xxxviii. 1 Thess.
Having therefore all
these things from him,
we ought in all things
to give thanks to him.

XXV. 1 Thess. v.
23. *And I pray God,
your whole spirit, and
soul, and body, be pre-*

XXV. Ch. xxxviii.
Let therefore our
whole body be saved
in Jesus Christ.

G 2

served

(s) Περιπατῆσαι ὑμᾶς ἀξίως τοῦ κυρίου εἰς πᾶσαν ἀρεσκίαν, κ. λ.

(t) Ἐὰν μὴ ἀξίως αὐτῷ πο-
λιτευόμενοι, τὰ καλὰ καὶ ἐνάν-
τιον ἐνώπιον αὐτοῦ ποιῶμεν
μεθ' ὁμονίας.

A. D. ^{96.} served blameless unto
the coming of our Lord
Jesus Christ.

1 Tim.

XXVI. 1 Tim. ii.

8. I will therefore,
that men pray every
where, lifting up holy
hands without wrath
and doubting.

XXVII. 1 Tim.

iii. 13. For they that
have used the office of
a deacon well, pur-
chase to themselves a
good degree, and great
boldness which is in
the faith of Christ.

XXVIII. 1 Tim.

v. 4. For that is (u)
good and acceptable
before God.

(u) Τὸτο γὰρ ἐστὶ καλὸν καὶ
ἀποδεκτὸν ἐνώπιον τοῦ Θεοῦ.

XXVI. Ch. xxix

Let us therefore come
to him in holiness
of soul, lifting up to
him chaste and un-
defiled hands.

XXVII. Ch: li

Let him say — I am
ready to depart —
only let the flock of
Christ be in peace
with the elders that
are set over it. He
that shall do this, will
procure to himself
great glory in the
Lord, and every place
will receive him.

XXVIII. Ch. vi

Let us consider what
(x) is good, and what
agreeable, and ac-
ceptable

(x) Τὶ καλὸν, καὶ τὶ τερ-
νόν, καὶ ἀποδεκτὸν ἐνώπιον τοῦ
Θεοῦ ἡμᾶς.

Befi
particu
deliver
alludes
first v
not an
the you

XX
9. Wh
and cal
boly ca

XX
To (y
every
XX
Who
bright
and th

of his
Being

(y) Π
δὸν ἐτοίμ
(a) ὁ
δύτης.
(c) Το
μεν τὰ

ceptable in the fight *A. D.*
of him that made us. *96.*

Beside the agreement of the words, the particular modestie, with which *Clement* here delivers his advice, induces me to think, he alludes to this place: *St. Paul* having in the first verses of that chapter directed: *Rebuke not an elder, but entreat him as a father, and the young men as brethren.*

N. T.

Clement.

XXIX. 2 Tim. i.

XXIX. Ch. vii. *2 Tim.*

9. *Who has saved us, and called us with an holy calling.*

And let us come up to the glorious and venerable rule of our holy calling.

XXX. Titus iii. 1.

XXX. Ch. ii. *Ye Titus.*

To (y) be ready to every good work.

(x) were ready unto every good work.

XXXI. Heb. i. 3.

XXXI. Ch. xxxvi. *Hebrews.*

Who being the (a) brightnesse of his glory, and the expresse image of his person — 4. Being (c) made so much

Who being the (b) brightnesse of his Majesty, is by so much greater (d) than the angels, as he has by in- better

G 3

(y) Πρὸς πᾶν ἔργον ἀγα-
θὸν ἐτοιμὸς.

(a) Ὃς ὡς ἀπαύγασμα τῆς
δόξης.

(c) Τοσούτω κρείττων γενέ-
μεν τῶν ἀγγέλων, ὅσῳ δι-

(x) Ἐτομοὶ εἰς πᾶν ἔργον
ἀγαθόν.

(b) Ὃς ὡς ἀπαύγασμα τῆς
μεγαλότητος αὐτοῦ.

(d) Τοσούτω μείζων ἐστὶν ἀγ-
γέλων, ὅσῳ διαφορώτερον ὄνο-
μα φερόντων

*A. D. better than the angels,
 96. as he has by inheri-
 tance obtained a more
 excellent name than
 they. 5. For unto
 which of the angels
 said he at any time:
 Thou art my son, this
 day have I begotten
 thee? [Comp. Ps. ii.
 7. 8.] v. 7. And
 of the angels he saith:
 Who maketh his angels
 spirits, and his mini-
 sters a flame of fire,
 [Ps. civ. 4.] v. 13.
 But to which of the
 angels said he at any
 time, sit thou on my
 right hand, untill I
 make thine enemies
 thy footstool? [Psal.
 cx. i.]*

XXXII. Heb. iii.
 2. *As also Moses was
 faithful in all his*

*heritance obtained a
 more excellent name
 than they. For so
 it is written: Who
 maketh his angels spi-
 rits, and his ministers
 a flame of fire. But
 of his Son thus said
 the Lord: Thou art
 my Son, this day have
 I begotten thee. Ask
 of me, and I will give
 thee the Heathen for
 thine inheritance, and
 the utmost parts of the
 earth for thy posses-
 sion. And again he
 saith unto him: Sit
 thou on my right hand,
 until I make thine ene-
 mies thy footstool.*

XXXII. Ch. xliiii.
 When also Moses that
 blessed and faithful
 house.

απορώτερον παρ' αὐτὸς κλη-
 ρονόμηκεν ὄνομα.

μα κληρονόμηκεν.

Ch. I.
 house.
 verily
 faithful
 house.

Cor
 7. M
 is not
 ful in

XX
 12. A
 cerner
 and
 heart.

XX
 18. T
 mutab
 which
 for G

XX
 xi. 5.
 was
 be sho
 and
 becau
 lated

(e) K
 σταν κ

house. v. 5. And servant in all his house. A. D. 96.
 verily Moses was And Ch. xviii. Moses
 faithful in all his was called faithful in
 house. all his house.

Comp. Numb. xii.

7. My servant Moses
 is not so, who is faith-
 ful in all mine house.

XXXIII. Heb. iv.

12. And is (e) a dis-
 cerner of the thoughts
 and intents of the
 heart.

XXXIV. Heb. vi.

18. That by two im-
 mutable things, in
 which it was impossible
 for God to lye.

XXXV. Heb. Ch.

xi. 5. By faith Enoch
 was translated, that
 he should not see death,
 and was not found,
 because God had trans-
 lated him. [Comp.

XXXIII. Ch. xxi.

For he is (f) a search-
 er of the intents and
 thoughts.

XXXIV. Ch. xxvii.

For nothing is im-
 possible with God,
 but to lye.

XXXV. Ch. ix.

Let us take Enoch
 [for our example]
 who by obedience
 being found righte-
 ous, was translated,
 and his death was not

G 4

Gen.

(e) Καὶ κριτικὸς ἐνθυμή-
 σιων καὶ ἐννοσιῶν καρδίας.

(f) Ἐρευνητὴς γὰρ ἐστὶν ἐν-
 νοσιῶν καὶ ἐνθυμήσεων.

A. D. Gen. v. 24.] v. 7.
 96. *By faith Noe being
 warned of God of
 things not seen as yet,
 moved with fear, pre-
 pared an ark. —*

v. 8. *By faith A-
 braham, when he was
 called to go out into a
 place which he should
 hereafter receive for
 an inheritance, obeyed,
 and he went out, not
 knowing whither he
 went. Comp. Gen.
 xii, 1.*

v. 31. *By faith the
 harlot Rahab perished
 not with them that be-
 lieved not, when she
 had received the spies*

found. *Noah* being
 found faithful, did by
 his ministry preach
 regeneration to the
 world: And the Lord
 by him saved the liv-
 ing creatures that
 went with one ac-
 cord into the ark.

Ch. x. This man
 [*Abraham*] by obedi-
 ence went out of his
 own countrey, and
 from his kindred,
 and from his father's
 house, that so for-
 saking a small coun-
 trey, and a weak affi-
 nity, and a little
 house, he might in-
 herit the promises of
 God.

Ch. xii. By faith
 and hospitality was
 Rahab the harlot fav-
 ed. For when the
 spies were sent by
 with

with
 Josh.

v.
 shall

the
 me to
 vid
 and t

v.
 faith
 mouth

v.
 violen

v.
 tortur

v.
 bad

mock

over
 prison

v.
 stoned

with

with peace. Comp. Josh. ii. 1—6.

Joshua the son of Nun to Jericho — ^{A. D. 96.}

The hospitable Rahab having received them, hid them on the top of her house, under stalks of flax.

v. 32. *And what shall I more say? For the time would fail me to tell of—David also, and Samuel, and the prophets.*

v. 33. *Who thro' faith—stopped the mouths of lions.*

v. 34. *Quenched the violence of fire.*

v. 35. *Others were tortured.*

v. 36. *And others had trials of cruel mockings, yea moreover of bonds and imprisonment.*

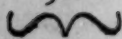
v. 37. *They were stoned—were slain with the sword, afflict-*

Ch. xlv. The righteous were persecuted, but it was by the wicked. They were cast into prison, but it was by the unholily. They were stoned by transgressors. They were put to death by cursed men, and those who had conceived unjust envie. When they suffered these things, they endured them gloriously. For what shall we say, brethren? was Daniel cast into the den of lions by men fearing God? Were Ananias,

ed,

A. D. ed, tormented.

96.



v. 39. *And these all having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promises.*

v. 37. *They wandered (g) about in sheep-skins and goat-skins.*

(g) Περιήλθον ἐν μηλωταῖς, ἐν ἀγέλοις δέρμασιν.

Misael, and Azarias, thrust into the furnace of fire by men practising the excellent and glorious worship of the most High? — Men full of all wickedness proceeded to so great rage, as to bring into torment those that feared God. But they enduring with a full persuasion have obtained glory and honour, and have been exalted, and lifted up by God in their memorial throughout all ages.

Ch. xvii. Let us be imitators of (b) those who went about in goat-skins, and

(b) Οἵτινες ἐν δέρμασιν αἰγείοις, καὶ μηλωταῖς περιεπάτησαν, κ. λ. Confer. Clem. Al. Strom. L. iv. p. 516. B. C.

and sheep - skins, ^{A. D.}
preaching the coming ^{96.}
of Christ.

XXXVI. Heb. xii.

1. *Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which does so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us.* 2. *Looking unto Jesus, the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him, endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.*

XXXVI. Ch. xix.

The humility and submissive obedience of so many and so excellent men, thus testified of, have made not only us, but the generations before us, better. — Having therefore many and great and glorious examples, let us return to the mark of peace, which from the beginning was set before us: and let us look up steadfastly to the Father and Creator of the whole world: and let us cleave to his glorious, and exceeding excellent gifts and benefits of peace, See also Ch. xvi. beginning.

A. D.

96.

v. 6. *For whom the Lord loveth, he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth.* [See Prov. iii. 11.] v. 9. *Furthermore, we have had fathers of our flesh, which corrected us, and we gave them reverence. Shall we not much more be in subjection to the Father of spirits, and live?* 10. *For they verily for a few daies chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.* 11. *Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: Nevertheless, afterwards it yieldeth the peaceable fruits of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.*

Ch. lvi. Let us receive correction, at which no man ought to repine. The reproof and correction which we exercise toward one another is good, and exceeding profitable; for it closely unites us to the will of God. For so says the sacred word — *Whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth* — Ye see, Beloved, there is a defense for those who are corrected by the Lord. For being a good instructor, he is willing we should be admonished by his holy discipline.

I have

I have now represented the several supposed allusions of *Clement* to the epistle to the *Hebrews*. And I think, we must assent to *Eusebe*, that *Clement* has inserted in his epistle many of the sentiments of the epistle to the *Hebrews*, and made use of some of the very words of it. But of these last there are not many instances. And some (*i*) may be apt to think it not impossible, for a man who had been conversant with the Apostles: who was fully instructed in their doctrine, and manner of reasoning, and also well acquainted with the Old Testament; to write with this great resemblance of the epistle to the *Hebrews*, both in thought and expression, without borrowing from it, or imitating it.

A. D.
96.

Dodwell was not positive, that (*k*) the parallel places in *Clement* were taken from the epistle to the *Hebrews*.

After all, it must be owned, that we lye here under some disadvantage. We have not the whole epistle of *Clement* before us,

as

(*i*) See Mr. J. Hallet's Introduction to his Paraphrase of the three last chapters of the ep. to the Hebr. p. 2. 3.

(*k*) Nec tamen illam [*ad Hebr. epistolam*] penitus fuisse etiam antiquioribus illis temporibus incognitam, ostendunt loca gemina, ut videtur, inde desumpta in *Clementis* epistola ad Corinthios. *Diff. Iren. i. n. 41.*

A. D. as *Eusebe* had. And therefore we are not
 96. so good judges of the agreement between the
 two epistles, as he was: who seems to have
 been fully satisfied, that *Clement* had an eye
 to the epistle to the *Hebrews*, and did plain-
 ly (1) manifest that epistle to be no modern
 writing.

N. T.

James.

XXXVII. *James*
 i. 5. If any of you
 lack wisdom, let him
 ask of God, that giv-
 eth to all men liberal-
 ly, and upbraideth not,
 and it shall be given
 him. 6. But let him
 ask in faith, nothing
 wavering — 7. For
 let not that man think,
 that he shall receive a-
 ny thing of the Lord.
 8. A double-minded
 (m) man is unstable in
 all his waies.

Clement.

XXXVII. Ch. xxiii.
 Our all-merciful, and
 beneficent Father has
 bowels toward them
 that fear him: and
 in a most kind and
 tender manner be-
 stows his favours up-
 on them that come to
 him with a simple
 mind. Wherefore let
 us not be double-
 minded: neither let
 us doubt in our hearts
 about his excellent
 and glorious gifts. Let
 that be far from us
 which is written: Mi-
 serable (n) are the
 double-

(1) See before p. 56.

(m) Ἄνθρωπος διψυχὸς ἀκατά-

(n) Ταλαίπωροι εἰσιν οἱ
 σαλῶ

2
 sayin
 prom
 For
 fell
 conti
 from
 the c
 T
 but
 part
 had
 luded

X
 ii. 2
 fathe
 fied
 be b
 his o
 altar

σατῶ
 αὐτοῦ.

double-minded, who are ^{A. D.}
doubtful in their minds, ^{96.}

2 Pet. iii. 4. And saying: Where is the promise of his coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

and say: These things have we heard, even from our fathers, and behold, we are grown old, and none of these things have happened to us. See numb. xlv.

There is no great agreement here in words but the sense is so resembling in the former part of this paragraph, that either Clement had an eye to St. James, or they both alluded to some one third writer.

N. T.

Clement.

XXXVIII. James

XXXVIII.Ch.xxxi.

ii. 21. Was not our father Abraham justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his only son upon the altar?

For what was our father Abraham blessed? Was it not, because that through faith he wrought righteousness and truth? Isaac knowing with full assurance what was to come

σατ. εν πάσαις ταῖς ὁδοῖς αὐτοῦ.

διδυχοι, οι διαζωτες την ψυχην. κ. λ.

St. CLEMENT. Book I.

v. 23. *And was called the friend of God.*

Comp. 2 Chron. xx. 7. — *and gavest it to the seed of Abraham thy friend.* If. xli. 8. *The seed of Abraham my friend.*

v. 24. *Ye see then, how by works a man is justified, not by words.*

XXXIX. James iii. 13. *Who is a wise man, and endowed with knowledge amongst you? Let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meeknesse of wisdom.*

XL. James iv. 3. *Ye ask, and receive*

come willingly became a sacrifice.

Ch. x. Abraham, who was called [God's] friend, was found faithful, in that he was obedient to the words of God.

Ch. xvii. Abraham has been greatly witnessed of, and was called the friend of God.

Ch. xxx. Justified by works, not by words.

XXXIX. Ch. xxxviii. Let the wise man shew forth his wisdom, not in words, but in good works.

XL. Ch. xxx. Fleeing evil-speaking

not,

Ch.

not,

miss,

sume

4. Y

adult

not?

he gi

When

God

but g

humb

iii. 34

XL

For (o

cover

sins.

v. 20.

XL

Tea al

ject one

be clot

mility;

(o) Or

not,

not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your lusts.

4. Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not? — v. 6. But he giveth more grace. Wherefore he says: God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace to the humble. See Prov. iii. 34.

one against another, all filthie and impure embraces — abominable concupiscences, detestable adulterie, and execrable pride. For God, says he, resisteth the proud, but giveth grace to the humble.

These last words are also in 1 Pet. v.

5. But the context of James and Clement agree, as well as Prov. iii. 34.

Ch. XLII. 1 Pet. iv. 8.

For (o) charity shall cover a multitude of sins. Comp. James v. 20.

Ch. XLII. 1 Pet. v. 5.

Ye all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility; for God re-

H

Ch. XLIX. Ch. xlix. 1 Pet.

Charity (p) covers the multitude of sins.

Ch. XLII. Ch. xxxviii.

And let every one be subject to his neighbour.

Ch. ii. Ye were all

resisteth

(o) ὅτι ἡ ἀγάπη καλύπτει πολλὰ τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν.

(p) Ἡ ἀγάπη καλύπτει πολλὰ τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν.

A. D. ^{96.} *sisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble. See above No. 40.*

of you humble-minded — rather subject, than subjecting. The A. B. desiring rather to be subject, than to govern.

Ch. xxx. *For God, saith he, resisteth the proud, but giveth grace to the humble.*

2 Pet.

XLIII. 2 Pet. ii.

5. *And saved Noah a preacher of righteousness.*

XLIII. Ch. vii. Noah preached repentance, and they who hearkened [to him] were saved.

v. 6. *And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned them with an overthrow. — 7. And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked. — 9. The Lord knows how to deliver the godly out of temptation, and to reserve the unjust un-*

Ch. xi. By hospitality and godliness was Lot delivered out of Sodom, when all the countrey round about was destroyed by fire and brimstone: the Lord thereby making it manifest, that he does not forsake those that trust in him; but those that turn aside

to

to the
ment

Just
be co
XI

4. An
is the
coming
father.
things
were j
ing of

Clement
tiquity
N. T.
that mi
endeavo
have all
might
refer to
Testam

to the day of judgement to be punished.

Jude, ver. 7. may be compared.

XLIV 2 Pet. iii.

4. And saying: Where is the promise of his coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

[from his commandments] he appoints to punishment and torment.

XLIV. Ch. xxiii.

Let that be far from us which is written: *Miserable are the double-minded, who are doubtful in their mind, which say: These things have we heard even from our fathers; and behold, we are grown old, and none of these things have happened to us. See Numb. xxxvii.*

XLV. I have now put down from St. Clement what is proper for confirming the antiquity and genuinnesse of the books of the N. T. I have omitted divers lesser matters, that might be taken notice of. But I have endeavored to select the most remarkable. I have also omitted some passages, because they might be supposed equally, if not rather to refer to some text in the Old, than the New Testament. And where I have alleged any

H 2

passages

A. D.
96.

*The sum
of St. Cle-
ment's tes-
timonie.*

A. D.

96.

passages that contain any words of the Old Testament, as well as the New, I have marked them, as I have gone along.

In the passages I have alleged the references, or allusions, are not all equally clear. But I think the sum of the testimonie of *Clement* to the scriptures of the N. T. does amount to thus much.

The first epistle to the *Corinthians* is expressly ascribed to *Paul*. Words of our Blessed Lord found in the Gospels of *Matthew*, *Mark*, and *Luke*, are recommended with a high degree of respect, but without the names of the Evangelists. And though, as I have already owned, all these passages are not equally important, or clear; yet I think, they are such, as deserve to be considered, whether there are not allusions (beside the Evangelists) to the *Acts of the Apostles*; the epistle of *Paul* to the *Romans*; both the epistles to the *Corinthians*; the epistles to the *Galatians*, *Ephesians*, *Philippians*, *Colossians*; the first to the *Thessalonians*; first and second to *Timothie*, to *Titus*, the epistle to the *Hebrews*, the epistle of *James*, and the first and second of *Peter*: But all without any name, or so much as a mark of citation. Among these books, the references and allu-

sions

Ch

fions
denia
mans.shoul
tle to
were
menti

more,

(q), a
churcthe ep
much

ment h

if the

as an e

it wou

how t

Mil

from

hands,

also th

to the

tbians,

And

(q) H.

(r) Ad

2. p. 608.

(s) Pr

Ch. II. St. CLEMENT:

IOI

fions to some are manifest, and I think undeniable: as those to the epistle to the *Romans*, and the first to the *Corinthians*. I should likewise willingly place here the epistle to the *Hebrews*, as certainly alluded to, were it not for those considerations above-mentioned at Numb. XXXVI, and for one more, which I shall now mention. *Eusebe* (q), and St. *Jerome* (r), inform us, that the church of *Rome* in their time did not receive the epistle to the *Hebrews*. This seems very much to weaken the supposition, that *Clement* had often alluded to that epistle. For if the church of *Rome* in his time owned it as an epistle of *Paul*, or otherwise canonical; it would be somewhat difficult to conceive, how they should afterwards reject it.

Mill (s) however allows, that it appears from this epistle, that *Clement* had in his hands, not only our first three *Gospels*, but also the *Acts of the Apostles*, and the epistle to the *Romans*, both the epistles to the *Corinthians*, and the epistle to the *Hebrews*.

And the testimonie hereby given to the
H 3 antiquity,

(q) *H. E. L. 3. c. 3.*

(r) *Ad Dardanum, ep. 129. ord. vulg. edit. Martian. T. 2. p. 608.*

(s) *Proleg. n. 140.*

A. D.

96

A. D. 96. antiquity, genuinnesse, or authority, of the books of the New Testament, is to be esteemed not only the testimonie of *Clement*, but likewise of the church of *Rome* in his time. Moreover, it ought to be allowed, that the *Corinthians* likewise, to whom this epistle was sent, were acquainted with, and highly respected the books quoted or alluded to.

I would also observe concerning this epistle, as I did before of that ascribed to *Barnabas*, that I have not perceived in it any quotations, or references, to any of the Apocryphal Gospels, as they are called. Nor do I remember, that any of the passages of the Gospel according to the *Hebrews*, or that according to the *Egyptians*, which have been collected by learned men from the writings of the ancient Christians, are taken out of this epistle.

The only exception to this must be, I think, the quotation at Numb. XXXVII. *Let that be far from us which is written, Miserable are the double-minded*: But if he does not intend the epistle of St. *James*, nor the second of St. *Peter*; still I apprehend it most likely, that he does not refer to any apocryphal book of the N. T. but to some writing

Ch.
ing
or A
wor
Clem
" F
" an
was
the
the

(t)
Δένειν
24. T
Id. ad
κός δ
πρὸς
E. l.
Es. c

ing of the Old Testament, either Canonical, *A. D.*
 or Apocryphal; the rather, because the same ^{96.}
 words are quoted in the Fragment, called
Clement's second epistle, §. xi. in this manner:
 "For the Prophetic word says: *Miserable*
are the double-minded." — which (*t*)
 was a common form of quotation among
 the ancient Christians, when they intended
 the scriptures of the Old Testament.

(*t*) Προφητικὸς λόγος. *Euseb. Comm. in Ps. p. 83. C.*
Δείκνυσιν ὁ προφητικὸς λόγος. Theodret. in Ps. lxxvii. v.
24. T. 1. p. 707. D. Διδάσκει τόνον ὁ προφητικὸς λόγος.
Id. ad Ps. lxxiv. v. 16. p. 721. D. ἐν τῷ ψαλμῷ ὁ προφητι-
κὸς λόγος. Ad Ps. cv. p. 824. A. Et passim. Περὶ ἧς τὸ
προφητικὸν πνεῦμά φησι. Alex. Episcop. Alex. ap. Theod. H.
E. l. i. c. 4. p. 12. C. ὁ εὐαγγελικὸς λόγος. Theod. in
Es. cap. x. T. 2, p. 50. D.





CHAP. III.

A Fragment called St. CLEMENT'S second epistle.

BESIDE the epistle of *Clement* to the *Corinthians* there is a fragment of a piece, called his second epistle: which being doubtful, or rather plainly not *Clement's*, I do not quote as his. I shall however, as I promised, give an account of the method of quoting the scriptures of the New Testament in this piece, which by (*a*) some is thought not to be an epistle, but a discourse or sermon.

I. §. iv. " Let us then not only call him
" Lord, for that will not save us. For he
" saith: *Not every one that saith unto me,*
" *Lord, Lord, shall be saved, but he that*
" *doth righteousness.*" Matth. vii. 21.
" Wherefore if we should do such wicked
" things,

(*a*) Sed nec epistolae formam servat secunda haec, quae dicitur, epistola—Et vero recentiore illam esse Clemente, et pro ejus *διδάχῃ* potius habendam alibi ostendimus. *Dodwell de annis priorum Romae episcop. Diff. 2. c. vi. p. 202. vid. et Diff. i. Iren. §. 29. &c. Vid. et Grabe Spicil. P. i. p. 268.*

“ things, the Lord hath said : Though ye
 “ should be joined unto me, even in my ve-
 “ ry bosom, and not keep my command-
 “ ments, *I would cast you off*, and say unto
 “ you : *I know ye not whence ye are, ye*
 “ *workers of iniquity.*” Matth. vii. 23.
 Luke xiii. 27.

II. Ch. ii. And another scripture saith : *I*
came not to call the righteous but sinners.
 Matth. ix. 13.

III. Ch. v. For the Lord saith : *Ye shall*
be as sheep in the midst of wolves. [Matth. x.
 16.] Peter answered and said : What if the
 wolves shall tear in pieces the sheep ? Jesus
 said unto Peter : Let not the sheep fear the
 wolves after death. *And ye also fear not*
those that kill you, and after that have no
more that they can do unto you : but fear him,
who after you are dead, has power to cast both
soul and body into Hell-fire. See Luke xii.
 4. 5. and also Matth. x. 28.

IV. Ch. iii. For even he himself says :
Whosoever shall confess me before men, him will
I confess before my Father. See Matth. x. 32.

V. Ch. viii. For so the Lord hath said :
They are my brethren, who do the will of my
Father. See Matth. xii. 50.

VI. Ch. viii. For the Lord saith in the
 Gospel :

Gospel: *If ye have not kept that which was little, who will give you that which is great? For I say unto you: He that is faithful in that which is least, is faithful also in much.* See Luke xvi. 10. 12.

VII. Ch. vi. For thus saith the Lord: *No servant can serve two masters. If therefore we shall desire to serve God and Mammon, it will be no profit to us.* [Luke xvi. 13. and Matth. vi. 24.] *For what shall it profit, if one gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?* See Matth. xvi. 26.

VIII. Ch. i. This fragment begins thus: "Brethren, we ought so to think of Jesus Christ as of God; as of the judge of the quick and the dead." Where may be thought to be a reference to Acts x. 42. But as this character of Christ was a common article of every Christian's belief, and may be found in other texts of the N. T. that cannot, I think, be depended upon.

IX. Ch. vii. "And yet all are not crowned, but they only that labor much, and strive gloriously." Comp. 2 Tim. ii. 9. In the same chapter, or section, seem to be divers allusions to 1 Cor. ix. 24. 25.

X. Ch. iii. — but have by him been brought to the knowledge of the Father of truth

truth. Whereby shall we shew, that we do know him, [or, what is the knowledge which is toward him,] but by not denying him, by whom we have come to the knowledge of him? Perhaps here is an allusion to 1 John iii. 19. or v. 20.

XI. Lastly, Ch. xii. near the conclusion of this fragment are some words mentioned, as spoken by our Lord, which are not in our Gospels, and are supposed to be taken out of an apocryphal writing, called the Gospel according to the *Egyptians*. Which are to this purpose: "The Lord himself being asked
" by some body, when his kingdom should
" come, said: *When two shall be one, and*
" *that which is without, as that which is*
" *within, and the male with the female neither*
" *male nor female.*

XII. What we have to observe here is, that we have the Gospels several times quoted in this fragment, more expressly than in Clement's epistle to the *Corinthians*, with such terms as these: *He himself says: The Lord saith: thus saith the Lord: another scripture says, and the Lord saith in the Gospel:* And that in a fragment, not one fifth part so large as the forementioned epistle to the *Corinthians*. This is an internal character, that may confirm

*The Sum of
this testi-
monie.*

confirm the account given by *Eusebe*, and the judgement of those modern critics, who have supposed it not to have the same author with the epistle to the *Corinthians*, and to be of a later date. For which reason I may be the shorter in my remarks upon it: though it is undoubtedly ancient, written before the time of *Eusebe*, in the third centurie at the latest.

And as this piece has not *Clement* for it's author, we have the less reason to be concerned about the apocryphal quotation just mentioned. For whenever that Gospel was composed, this quotation can never prove it to be so ancient as our Gospels, nor as *Clement* himself.

Mr. *Jones* (b) has made divers just observations upon this fragment, and several of the passages here cited by me.

(b) See *New and full Method, &c. Vol. 1. in the Appendix. p. 522.—531.*

CHAP. IV.

HERMAS.

His Historie.

THE antiquity of the book, called the *A. D.*
Shepherd or *Pastor of Hermas*, is ma- ^{100.}
nifest and unquestionable from the quotati-
ons of it in *Irenaeus*, *Clement of Alexandria*,
Origen, *Tertullian*, and others.

I must be as brief as I can in the testimo-
nies I allege. Therefore referring to (a) *Co-*
telerius for the rest, I shall only put down
those of *Eusebe* in his *Ecclesiastical Historie*,
and *St. Jerome* in his catalogue of *Illustrious*
Men; as representing very much the sense
of the ancients before them concerning
the value of this book, as well as that of the
Christians of their own time.

Eusebe

(a) *Patres Apost.* vol. i. See also *B. Wake's* *prelimi-*
nary Discourse, chap. viii. *Cave Hist. Lit.* *Du Pin Bibl.*
et Tillemont Mem. *Eccles. T. ii. Part i.* *Fabric. Bib. Gr. T.*
v. p. 7, &c.

A. D. ^{100.} *Eusebe* (b) speaking of what are the genuine writings of *Peter* and *Paul*, adds:
 “ Forasmuch as the Apostle in the salutations at the end of his epistle to the *Romans* makes mention among others of *Hermas*, who, it is said, wrote the book called the *Shepherd*; it is to be observed, that it is doubted of by some. Wherefore it ought not to be placed among the books of unquestioned authority: By others it is judged to be a most necessarie book, especially for those who are to be instructed in the first elements of religion. And we know, that it is publicly read in the churches, and that some very ancient writers make use of it.”

In another place of the same work, having spoken of the books of the New Testament, which ought to be received, he says: “ Among (c) the spurious are to be placed the *Acts of Paul*, the book called the *Shepherd*, and the *Revelation of Peter*.” By which we are not, I think, to understand, that the book of *Hermas*, or the *Shepherd*, is not genuine, but that it ought not to be reckoned canonical scripture.

St.

(b) H. E. L. 3. c. 3. p. 72. C. D.

(c) Ἐν τοῖς νόμοις κατατάσσεται, κ. λ. Euf. H. E. l. 3. c. 25. p. 97. B.

(d) Cap.
(e) De P.
(f) See

Ch. III.

HERMAS.

III

St. *Jerome* in the book (d) of *Illustrious Men*: “*Hermas*, of whom the Apostle makes mention in his epistle to the *Romans*, saying: *Salute Asyncritus, Pblegon, Patrobas, Hermas, Hermes, and the brethren, which are with them*, is affirmed to be the author of the book, which is called *Pastor*. And it is publicly read in some churches of *Greece*. It is indeed a useful book, and many of the ancient writers have made use of testimonies out of it. But among the *Latins* it is almost unknown.” So *Jerome* says. But it was well known to (e) *Tertullian*, and to the Christian churches in general of his time, as is evident from the manner in which he speaks of it.

It is then probable, that this book was writ by *Hermas*, whom *Paul* salutes. And it ought not to be doubted, that it is an ancient Christian, ecclesiastical, writing, tho’ not properly canonical.

The exact time of writing it is uncertain. It appears from (f) the book itself, that it was writ at *Rome*, or near it, in the time of *Clement*,

(d) *Cap. x.*

(e) *De Pudicitia, cap. 10.*

(f) *See V. 1. begin. & Vis. 2. §. 1. & §. 4.*

A. D. ^{100.} *Clement*, probably then Bishop. For *Hermas* is directed at the end of the second vision, to write two books, and send one to *Clement*, and one to *Grapte*. For *Clement* shall send it to the foreign cities. As therefore I place the Bishoprick of *Clement*, with most of the ancients, about the 91. year of our Lord and onwards; I suppose this book to have been writ toward the later end of the first centurie of the Christian aera. *Tillemont* (g) supposes it was writ about the year 92, a little before *Domitian's* persecution. Which leads me to observe, that it is more than once intimated in the book itself, that a time of trial was then near. "But thou wilt say: Behold, there is a great trial coming." Vis. 2. §. 3. Again, "Here you have the figure of the great tribulation, that is about to come." V. iv. §. 3. See also Vis. 2. §. 2. quoted hereafter, No. III. This trial could not be the persecution under *Nero*, because that was the first great persecution: and before the writing of this book, Christians had suffered wild beasts, scourging, imprisonments, and crosses. Vis. iii. §. 2. which is a good description of the persecution under *Nero*. See also *Simil.* ix. §. 28. This trial

(g) *Mem. Et. T. 2. Par. 1 in Hermas, p. 201. Bruxelles.*

Ch.
trial
under
some
seems
" Be
" ers
" Go
" por
" for
ment v
Eusebe
we ca
than
about
writer
It is
of Pi
141.
suppor
is conf
writers
have,

(b) H
Vid. Da
250. et
Blondel
Beauf. E
confute
contrarie
Pin, and

trial therefore must relate to the persecution under *Domitian*, about the year 94, or to some sufferings under *Trajan*. Moreover, it seems, that all the Apostles were now dead.

"Because, says he, *these Apostles and teachers, who preached the name of the Son of God, dying after they had received this power, preached to them who were dead before.*" Sim. ix. §. 16. However, as *Clement* was still living, who died, according to *Eusebe*, in the third of *Trajan*, A. D. 100. we cannot, I think, place this piece later than the conclusion of the first century, about which time it seems to have been written.

It is said, there was one *Hermes*, brother of *Pius*, Bishop of *Rome*, about the year 141. But there is no (b) good reason to suppose him the author of this book, which is constantly ascribed by the most ancient writers to *Hermas*. And that the book we have, is the same they had, is evident from

I

the

(b) However, some learned men have been of this opinion. Vid. *Dallacum de libris supp. Dionys. et Ignat. l. 2. c. 4. p. 250. et Basnage Annal. Polit. Ec. A. D. 157. n. 2. &c. Blondel des Sibylles l. 1. ch. v. p. 19. l. 2. ch. vi. p. 160. Beauf. Hist. des Manich. t. 2. p. 230.* I do not particularly confute this opinion. I have said enough above, that it is contrarie to the testimonie of the most ancient writers. *Du Pin*, and others, may be consulted by those who are curious.

A D. the agreement of their quotations with the
 100. book itself.

The Shepherd of *Hermas* was writ in Greek. But we have now only an ancient Latin version, beside some fragments of the Greek preserved in the ancient Greek authors who have quoted him. It consists of three books. In the first are four *Visions*, in the second twelve *Commands*, in the third ten *Similitudes*.

In *Hermas* are no express citations of any books of the New Testament. We must be content with only some words of scripture, or allusions to them. Nor was it suitable to the nature of his writing to quote books. There are no books of the O. T. quoted here.

N. T.

*Hermas.**Matth.*

I. Matth. v. 28.
But I say unto you, that whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her has committed adulterie with her already in his heart.

II. Matth. v. 42.
Give to him that ask-

I. Command iv. §.
 1. I command thee, that thou suffer not the thought of another (i) man's wife, or of fornication, to enter into thy heart.
Compare Vis. i. §. 1.

II. Comm. ii. "Give without distinction to
 eth

(i) Περὶ γυναικὸς ἀλλοτρείας.

eth thee.

Luke vi. 30. *Give to every one that asketh thee.*

all that are in want, *A. D.*
not doubting to whom thou givest, &c." ^{100.}

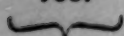
There follows a fine argument upon this subject, which may serve as a comment upon this text of the Gospel.

III. Matth. x. 32.

Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I also confess before my Father which is in heaven. 33. But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

III. *Vision* ii. §. 2.

Happy are ye, whosoever shall endure the great trial that is at hand, and whosoever shall not deny his life. For the Lord has sworn by his Son, that whosoever shall deny his Son, and him, being afraid of his life, they will also deny him in the world that is to come. But those who shall never deny him, of his great mercie he will be favorable to them.



Simil. ix. §. 28.

They who have deliberated in their heart, whether they should confess or deny him, and yet have suffered, their fruits are smaller. Wherefore I speak this unto you, who deliberate, whether ye should confess or deny him.

IV. *Matth.* xiii. 5.

Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepnesse of earth. 6. And when the sun was up, they were scorched: and because they had not root, they withered away — 20. But he that received the seed into

IV. *Similitude* ix, §. 21. Of the fourth mountain which had many herbs — some being touched by the heat of the sun withered, — their herbs having no (k) foundation. [that is, deepnesse of earth] For as their herbs dry away at the sight of the sun, so likewise the doubtful, as soon as
stony

(k) Nullum fundamentum habentes herbae eorum.

stony
is be
word,
joy re
Yet ha
himself
for a
tribula
tion a
the wo
he is
He alj
seed an
that be
and th
world,
fulnesse
the wor
cometh
V.M.
some fel
and the
up, and
Ch. x
I say un
rich ma
enter in

(l) Cum

stony places, the same is he that beareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it: 21. Yet has he not root in himself, but dureth for a while; for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended. 22. He also that received seed among thorns is he that beareth the word, and the care of this world, and the deceitfulnesse of riches, choaketh the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

V. Matth. xiii. 7. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choaked them.

Ch. xix. 23. Verily I say unto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom

they hear of persecutions, fearing inconveniences, return to their idols, and again serve them, and are ashamed to bear the name of their Lord. Vis. iii. §. 6. These are they who have faith, but have also the riches of this world. When (1) therefore tribulation ariseth, because of their riches and traffick, they deny the Lord.

V. Simil. ix. §. 20. They who are of the third mountain, which had thorns and brambles, are such as believed, but were some of them rich, others taken up with

*D. A.
100.*

(1) Cum ergo venerit tribulatio. —

A. D. of heaven. 24. —
 100. *It is easier for a camel
 to go through the eye
 of a needle, than for
 a rich man to enter
 into the kingdom of
 God.*

VI. Matth. xiii.
 31. 32. *The kingdom
 of heaven is like unto
 a grain of Mustard-
 seed — which —
 when it is grown, is
 the greatest among
 herbs, and becometh a
 tree, so that the birds
 of the air come and
 lodge in the branches
 thereof.*

See Mark iv. 30. —
 32. *So that the fowls
 of the air may lodge*

many affairs. For
 the brambles are rich-
 es: the thorns are
 they who are entang-
 led in much busineffe,
 and a diversity of af-
 fairs. These (m)
 therefore shall with
 difficulty [or *hardly*]
 enter into the king-
 dom of God.

VI. Simil. viii. §.
 3. This great tree,
 which covers the
 plains and the moun-
 tains, and all the
 earth, is the law
 of God, published
 throughout the whole
 world. This law is
 the Son of God,
 preached in all the
 ends of the earth.
 The people that stand
 under it's shadow are
 those which have
 under

(m) Hi ergo difficile in regnum Dei intrabunt.

under the shadow of it.

And Luke xiii. 19. 20.

VII. Matth. xviii.

3. *Verily I say unto you, except ye shall be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.* 4. *Whosoever therefore shall humble himself, as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.*

heard his preaching, and believed.

A. D.
100.

VII. *Simil.* ix. §. 29.

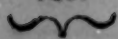
Whosoever therefore, says he, shall continue (n) as little children, free from malice, shall be more honorable, than all these, of whom I have yet spoken. For (o) all little children are honorable with the Lord, and esteemed the first of all. And §. 31. For this present world must be cut away from them, and the vanities of their riches, and then they will be fit for the kingdom of God. For they must enter into the kingdom of God, because God

I 4

has

(u) Quicunque ergo permanserint, inquit, sicut infantes.

(o) Omnes enim infantes honorati sunt apud Dominum, et primi habentur.



has blessed this innocent kind. — I the angel of repentance pronounce you happy, whosoever are innocent like little children, because your portion is good, and honorable with the Lord.

That is an excellent paraphrase of our Lord's discourse, *Matth. xviii.* and I think it plain, he has a reference to it.

N. T.

Hermas.

VIII. *Matth. xxiii.*
6. *And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues.* Compare *Mark xii. 39.* *Luke xii. 46.*

IX. *Matth. xxviii.*
18. *All power is given to me in heaven, and in earth.* 19. *Go ye therefore, and teach all nations.*

VIII. *Vis. iii. §. 9.*
I therefore now say unto you, who are (p) set over the church, and love the highest seats.

IX. *Simil. v. §. 6.*
You see, said he, that he is Lord of his people, having received all power from his Father.

Sim.

(p) — qui praeestis ecclesiae, et amatis primos confessus.

To
" It h
" bee

X.
Strive
the str
many,

will se
and sh
25.
master
risen u
to the
gin to
and to
door,

us, &c

XI.
Whosoe
way
marrie
mitteth

Sim. ix. §. 25. They ^{A. D.}
are such as believed ^{100.}
the Apostles, which
the Lord sent into all
the world to preach.

To all which might be added *Vis.* iv. §. 2.
“ It had been better for them they had not
“ been born.” See *Matth.* xxvi. 24.

N. T.

*Hermas.*X. *Luke* xiii. 24.

Strive to enter in at
the strait gate: for
many, I say unto you,
will seek to enter in,
and shall not be able.

25. When once the
master of the house is
risen up, and has shut
to the door, and ye be-
gin to stand without,
and to knock at the
door, saying, Open to
us, &c.

XI. *Luke* xvi. 18.

Whosoever putteth a-
way his wife, and
marrieth another, com-
mitteth adulterie: and

X. *Vis.* iii. §. 9. *Luke.*

Ye that are more
eminent, seek out the
hungry, whilst the
tower is yet unfinish-
ed. For when the
tower shall be finish-
ed, ye shall be wil-
ling to do good, and
shall have no place.

XI. *Command* iv.

§. 1. If the woman
continues on in her sin,
— Let her hus-
band put her away,
whosoever

A. D. ^{100.} *whosoever marrieth* and let him continue
her that is put away by himself. But if
from her husband, com- he shall put away his
mitteth adulterie. wife, and marry an-
 Comp. Matth. v. 32. other, he also doth
 commit adulterie.

This may be reckoned a probable, if not a manifest allusion to St. *Luke*.

XII. Our blessed Lord has several parables in the Gospels of a vineyard, particularly Matth. xxi. 33—41. Mark xii. 1—9. Luke xx. 9—17. *Hermas* [Simil. v. §. 2.] has a similitude of a husbandman and his vineyard, which bears a considerable resemblance with those parables.

N. T.

Hermas.

John.

XIII. John xiv. 6. *I am the way, and the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.* And our Lord compares himself to a door. Ch. x. 7. 9.

Entering into the kingdom of God is a common expression in the Gospels, and so likewise in *Hermas*. See particularly *Simil.* ix. §. 12.

N. T.

Ch.

XI

And from joining counte fer name.

XV

To the the g — an

Ch. xi

gifts God a pentan

XV

Know Spirit eth

Rom.

quicker rit th you.

(q) — feratis.

(r) Se

(s) Td

N. T.

Hermas.

A. D.

XIV. Acts v. 41.

XIV. *Simil.* iv. §. ^{100.}

And they departed from the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his name.

28. But ye who suffer death for his name, ought to honor the Lord; that the Lord counts you (y) worthy to bear his name.

XV. Rom. ix. 4.

XV. *Vis.* iii. §. 2. *Romans.*

To whom pertaineth the adoption, — and the giving the law, — and the promises.

However to both of them belong (r) gifts and promises.

Ch. xi. 29. *For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.*

For a reference to this epistle see likewise below Numb. xxv.

XVI. 1 Cor. iii. 16.

XVI. *Comm.* v. §. 1 *Corinth.*

Know ye not, that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you. And Rom. viii. 11. shall quicken you by his Spirit that dwelleth in you. 2 Tim. i. 14.

1. If thou shalt be patient, the Holy (s) Spirit that dwelleth in thee, shall be pure.

by

1

(q) — quod dignos vos habet dominus, ut nomen ejus feratis.

(r) Sed utrisque eis — sunt dona et promissiones.

(s) Τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον κατοικεῖ ἐν σοί.

T.

*A. D. by the Holy Ghost that
100. dwelleth in us.*

XVII. I Cor. iii.

17. *If any man defile
the temple of God,
him shall God destroy.*

XVIII. I Cor. vii.

11. *But and if she
depart, let her remain
unmarried, or be re-
conciled to her hus-
band: and let not the
husband put away his
wife. — 15. But if
the unbelieving depart,
let him depart, &c.*

XVII. *Simil. v. §.*

7. For if thou defile
thy body, thou shalt
also at the same time
defile the Holy Spi-
rit. And if thou de-
file thy body, thou
shalt not live.

XVIII. *Comm. iv.*

§. 1. If therefore a
woman perseveres in
any thing of this kind,
and repents not; de-
part from her, and
live not with her;
otherwise thou also
shalt be partaker of
her sin. But it is
therefore command-
ed, that both the
man and the wo-
man should remain
unmarried, because
such persons may re-
pent.

Perhaps

Perhaps *Hermas* refers here to the seventh chapter of the first epistle to the *Corinthians*. A. D.
100.

N. T.

Hermas.

XIX. 2 Cor. vii.

XIX. *Vis.* iii. §. 2. 2 *Corinth.*

10. — But the sorrow of the world worketh death.

But the remembrance of injuries, [or evils] worketh death ; but the forgetting them life eternal.

XX. Gal. iii. 27.

XX. *Simil.* ix. §. *Galat.*

For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ, have put on Christ.

13. So also they who have believed in God through his Son, have put on this Spirit.

XXI. Eph. iv. 4.

XXI. *Simil.* ix. §. *Ephes.*

There is one body, and one spirit, even as ye are called with one hope of your calling.

13. Behold there shall be one spirit, and one body, and one colour of their garments.

XXII. Ephes. iv.

XXII. *Comm.* iii.

30. And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God.

And should not have grieved the holy and true Spirit of God.

31. Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, — be put away

And *Comm.* x. §. 1. Speaking of anger, and doubting, and from

A. D. from you with all
 100. malice.

sadnesse, he says of
 the last: It (t) tor-
 ments the Holy Spirit:
 and afterwards, it (u)
 grieves the Holy Spirit.

And farther he ex-
 horts: Grieve * not
 the Holy Spirit that
 dwelleth in thee, least
 he ask of God, and de-
 part from thee.

Philip.

XXIII. Philip. iv.
 18. But I have all,
 having received the
 things which were sent
 from you, — a (x)
 sacrifice acceptable,
 well-pleasing to God.

However there are
 several texts resem-
 bling this, as Rom.
 xii. 1. 1 Tim. ii. 3.
 1 Pet. ii. 5.

XXIII. Simil. v. §.

3. Thy (y) sacrifice
 shall be acceptable
 in the sight of the
 Lord.

XXIV.

(i) Ἐλπίβει τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον. et §. 2. Ἄχκε ἔν πῶς ἡ
 λύπη ἐλπίβει τὸ πνεῦμα.

(u) Καὶ λύπει τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον.

* Καὶ μὴ λύπει. [al. θλίβει] τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον τὸ ἐν σοὶ
 καί σοι καὶ. μὴ ποιεῖς ἐντελευτῆσαι τῷ θεῷ καὶ ἀποστῇ ἀπὸ σε. Ibid. vid.
 Wolf. Cur. ad Eph. iv. 30.

(x) Θυσίαν δέκτην, ἐν ἀρετῶν
 τῷ θεῷ.

(y) Ἐσται ἡ θυσία σε δέκτη
 τῇ ἐνώπιον κυρίου.

XX
 Who i
 of eve
 For b
 things
 things
 him, a

XX
 13. A
 among
 Mar
 have p
 another
 Rom
 fore re
 other.

XXV
 18. A
 shall de

(z) Qu
 et propter
 (a) Nun
 et visitate
 dete ergo

XXIV. Col. i. 15.

*Who is — the first born
of every creature. 16.
For by him were all
things created — all
things were created by
him, and for him.*

XXIV. *Vis.* ii. §. A. D.

4. She (x) [*the church
of God*] is therefore,
said he, an old wo-
man, because she was
the first of all the
creation, and the
world was made for
her. And *Simil.* ix.
§. 12. The Son of
God is more ancient
than any creature.

100.
Coloss.

XXV. 1 Theff. v.

13. *And be at peace
among yourselves.*

Mark ix. 50. *And
have peace one with
another.*

Rom. xv. 7. *Where-
fore receive ye one an-
other.*

XXV. *Vis.* iii. §. 1 Theff.

9. Now (a) there-
fore hearken unto me,
and have peace one
with another, and
receive one another.
— Wherefore admo-
nish one another, and
be at peace among
yourselves.

XXVI. 2 Tim. iv.

18. *And the Lord
shall deliver me from*

XXVI. *Vis.* ii. §. 2 Tim.

3. They who are
such, shall prevail
every

(x) Quoniam, inquit, omnium prima creata est, ideo anus :
et propter illam mundus factus est.

(a) Nunc ergo audite me, et pacem habete alius cum alio ;
et visitate vos alterutrum, et suscipite invicem — Commo-
neste ergo vos invicem, pacatique estote inter vos.

A. D. every evil work, and
 100. will preserve me unto
 his heavenly kingdom.

Hebrews. XXVII. Heb. xii.
 17. For he found no
 place of repentance.

James. XXVIII. James
 i. 5. If any of you
 lack wisdom, let him
 ask of God, that giv-
 eth to all men liberally,
 and upbraideth not,
 and it shall be given
 him. 6. But let him
 ask in faith, nothing
 wavering. —

against all wicked-
 nesses, and continue
 unto eternal life.

XXVII. Sim. viii.
 §. 8. For (b) these
 there is no place of
 repentance.

XXVIII. Sim. v.
 §. 3. Whosoever is
 the servant of God,
 and hath the Lord
 in his heart, he ask-
 eth of him under-
 standing, and obtain-
 eth. — But (c) they
 that are indolent, and
 slow to pray, they
 doubt to ask of the
 Lord: although the
 Lord be of so inex-
 hausted goodnesse, as
 to give all things
 without ceasing to
 them that ask him.

XXIX.

(b) His igitur non est locus poenitentiae.

(c) Quicumque vero inertes sunt, et pigri ad orandum, illi
 dubitant petere a domino; cum sit dominus tam profundae
 bonitatis, ut petentibus a se cuncta sine intermissione tribuat.

XXIX. James ii.

7. *Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which ye are called?*

XXX. James iii.

15. *This wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish —*

17. *But the wisdom which is from above, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, easie to be entreated, full of mercy, and good fruits.*

XXXI. James iv.

2. *Ye lust, and ye have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain. Ye fight,*

XXIX. *Simil.* viii. §.

6. Who among their other crimes, blaspheming the Lord, have denied his name, which had been called upon them.

XXX. *Comm.* xi.

Believe not the earthly empty spirit, which is from the Devil, in which there is not faith, nor virtue. xii. §. 1. The spirit which (d) is from above is quiet, and humble, and departs from all wickednesse, and vain desire of this world, and makes himself more humble than any man.

XXXI. *Simil.* iv.

For they who are involved in much businesse, sin much, because they are ta-

K

and

(d) Spiritus qui desursum est, quietus est.

A. D.

100.

A. D. and war, yet ye have
 100. not, because ye ask
 not. 3. Ye ask, and
 receive not, because ye
 ask amiss, that ye may
 consume it upon your
 lusts. 4. — know
 ye not, that the friend-
 ship of this world is
 enmity with God?

XXXII. James iv.
 7. Submit yourselves
 therefore to God: re-
 sist the Devil, and he
 will flee from you.

XXXIII. James iv.
 12. There is one law-
 giver, who is able to
 save, and to destroy.

XXXIV. James v.
 1. Go to now, ye rich
 men, weep and howle
 for your miseries that
 shall come upon you.
 2. Your riches are
 corrupted, and your

ken up with their
 affairs, and serve not
 God. And how can
 a man that does not
 serve God, ask any
 thing of God and
 receive it?

XXXII. Comm. xii.
 §. 5. For if (e) ye re-
 sist him, [the Devil]
 he will flee from you
 with confusion.

XXXIII. Comm.
 xii. §. 6. Fear the
 Almighty Lord, who
 is able to save and
 to destroy you.

XXXIV. Vis. iii.
 §. 9. Wherefore this
 intemperance is hurt-
 ful to you who have
 and do not commu-
 nicate to them that
 want. Consider the
 garments

(e) Si enim resistitis illi [diabolo] fugiet a vobis confusus

garments
 —
 hire of
 which
 down,
 is of
 fraud,
 cries of
 reaped
 into
 Lord of

I sup-
 to pro-
 James,
 had a

XXI
 6. Th
 a season
 ye are
 through
 tations.
 trial of
 being m
 cious t

(f) Ne
 ascendat ad

garments moth-eaten.

— 4. Behold, the hire of the laborers, which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, cries: and the cries of them that have reaped, have entered into the ears of the Lord of Sabaoth.

judgement that is *A. D.*

100.

coming upon you. ~~~~~

— Beware therefore ye that glory in your riches, least (*f*) perhaps they sigh who are in want, and their sighing ascend to the Lord, and ye be shut out with your goods without the gate of the tower.

I suppose, all these passages are sufficient to prove the antiquity of the epistle of St. James, and that *Hermas* alluded to it, and had a high respect for it.

N. T.

Hermas.

XXXV. 1 Pet. i.

XXXV. *Vis.* iv. 1 *Peter.*

6. Though now for a season, if need be, ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations. 7. That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold

§. 3. The golden part are ye, who have escaped from this world. For as gold is tried by the fire, and made profitable, so are ye also tried who dwell among

K 2

that

(*f*) Ne forte ingemiscant ii qui egent, et gemitus eorum ascendat ad dominum, —

*A. D. that perisbeth, though
100. it be tried with fire,
might be found unto
praise, and honour, and
glory, at the appear-
ing of, Christ.*

them. [the men of
this world.] They
therefore who shall
endure to the end,
and be proved by
them shall be purged.
And as gold is cleansed,
and loses its dross;
so shall ye also cast
away all sorrow and
trouble, and be made
pure for the building
of the tower.

XXXVI. 1 Pet.
iii. 15. *But sanctify
the Lord God in your
hearts, and be alwaies
ready to give an an-
swer to every man
that asketh you a rea-
son of the hope that
is in you with meek-
nesse and fear.*

XXXVII. 1 Pet.
v. 7. *Casting all your*

XXXVI. *Comm.*
xii. §. 4. *Take care
therefore, ye that
are empty and light
in the faith, to have
the Lord your God
in your heart: and
ye shall perceive,
that nothing is more
easie, nor more plea-
sant, nor more gen-
tle, and holy than
these commands.*

XXXVII. *Vis. iv.*
§. 2. *Cast your cares
care*

care upon him, for he
careth for you.

(g) upon the Lord, *A. D.*
and he will direct ^{100.}
them. *Again, Vis.*
iii. §. 11, — And
did not cast your
care from yourselves
upon the Lord.

XXXVIII. 2 Pet.

ii. 15. *Which have
forsaken the right way.*

XXXVIII. *Vis.* iii. 2 *Peter.*

§. 7. They are such
as have believed in-
deed, but through
their doubtings have
forsaken the true
way.

V. 20. *For if af-
ter they have escaped
the pollutions of the
world, &c.*

Vis. iv. §. 3. The
golden parts are you
who have escaped this
world.

XXXIX. 1 John

ii. 27. *But the
anointing which ye
have received of him,
abideth in you —
and is truth, and is
no lie.*

XXXIX. *Comm.* 1 *John.*

iii. And the Lord
may be glorified, who
has given such a spi-
rit to thee. Because
(b) God is true in all
his word, and in him

K 3

there

(g) Immittite sollicitudines vestras super dominum, et ipse
diriget eas.

(b) Quia Deus verax in omni verbo, et non est mendacium
in ipso,

XL. 1 John iv. 6.
*Hereby know we the
spirit of truth.*

Ch. v. 6. — *be-
cause the spirit is
truth.*

He is called *the
spirit of truth* also
John xiv. 17. xv. 26.
xvi. 13.

2 John.

XLI. 2 John ver.
4. *I rejoice, that I
found of thy children
walking in truth.*

3 John ver. 3. —
*as thou walkest in the
truth.* v. 4. *I have
no greater joy, than
to hear, that my chil-
dren walk in truth.*

Jude.

XLII. Jude ver.
21. *Keep yourselves in*

there is no lye.

XL. *Comm.* iii.
For (i) they received
the spirit of truth,
and became habita-
tions of the true
spirit.

XLI. *Comm.* iii.
For thou oughtest, as
the servant of God,
to have walked in
the truth.

Indeed the whole
third Command in
Hermas, and the epi-
stles of St. *John*,
might be well com-
pared together.

XLII. *Vis.* iv. §.
3. Because (k) the
the

(i) Ἔλαβον γὰρ πνεῦμα ἀληθείας, καὶ ἐγένοντο οἰκιστὴρ
ἀληθινῆς πνεύματος.

(k) Quoniam immaculati et puri erunt electi Dei in vitam
aeternam.

the lov
ing fo
our L
unto e
Now
is able
falling
you fa
presenc
See all

XL

had rea
and in
sembling

I. S

thou se
seven a
Write

1. Unt
write.

his Vis

“ (l) v

“ their

“ Afte

“ the

“ came

(l) Dic
suas in ju
(m) Int

the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life. 24. Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his glory.

See also ver. 23.

XLIII. It is very probable, that *Hermas* Revelation. had read the book of St. *John's* Revelation, and imitated it. He has many things resembling it.

I. St. *John* is directed, Ch. i. 11. *What thou seest, write in a book, and send it to the seven churches that are in Asia.* — Ver. 19. *Write the things which thou hast seen.* Ch. ii. 1. *Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus write.* And so of the rest. *Hermas* also in his Visions receives orders to speak “to those (l) who preside over the church, to order their waies in righteousness.” Again. “After this I saw a vision in my house, and the old woman whom I had seen before came unto me, and asked (m) me, whe-

K 4

“ther

(l) Dices ergo eis qui praesunt ecclesiae, ut dirigant vias suas in justitia. Vis. ii. §. 2.

(m) Interrogavit me, si jam libellum dedissem senioribus — scribes

A. D. "ther I had delivered the book [or her
 100. "book] to the elders. And I answered,
 "that I had not yet. She replied, thou
 "hast well done. — Thou shalt write two
 "books, [that is, *two copies*] and send one
 "to *Clement*, and one to *Grapte*."

2. In the *Revelation*, ch. xii. the church is represented under the figure of a woman, as we have already seen the church to be in *Hermas*: who is expressly told, that (n) old woman is the church, and he has the reasons of the figure given him. In the *Revelation* that woman is persecuted by a dragon, *Hermas* also sees a great and terrible beast, which he is informed "is (o) the figure of "the tryal which was coming." St. *John* saw the *holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband*. Ch. xxi. 2. *Hermas* says, "Behold (p) there met me "a virgin well adorned, as if she were just "come out of the bride-chamber, clothed in "white.

— scribes ergo duos libellos, et mittes unum Clementi, et unum Graptæ. *ibid.* §. 4.

(n) Anum illam — quam putas esse? — Est ecclesia Dei. *Vil.* ii. §. 4.

(o) Bestia hæc figura est pressuræ supervenientis. *V.* iv. §. 2.

(p) Ecce occurrit mihi virgo quaedam exornata, tanquam de thalamo prodiens, tota in albis. *Ibid.*

"w
 "vi
 fees
 which
 cious
 "(q)
 In th
 square
 "bui
 3.
 says,
 twelve
 the tr
 man i
 "con
 "ing.
 "wh
 "the
 "and
 4.
 Blessed
 riage-f
 me, Th
 mas is

(q) Ne
 tur super
 (r) In
 (s) La
 commissu
 et Ministr
 (t) Cu

“white. — And I knew by my former *A. D.*
 “visions, that it was the church.” *St. John* ^{100.}
 sees a city, the *foundations of the walls of*
which were garnished with all manner of pre-
cious stones. Ch. xxi. 19. *Hermas* sees “a
 “(q) tower built with bright square stones.”
 In the Revelation, v. 16. *the city lies four*
square. The tower in *Hermas* likewise is
 “built upon (r) a square.”

3. Farther, the writer of the Revelation
 says, xxi. 14. *And the wall of the city had*
twelve foundations, and in them the names of
the twelve Apostles of the Lamb. The wo-
 man in *Hermas* says to him: “Hear now
 “concerning the stones that are in the build-
 “ing. Those (s) square and white stones,
 “which agree exactly in their joints, are
 “the Apostles, and Bishops, and Teachers,
 “and Ministers, —”

4. *St. John* is bid to write, ch. xix. 9.
Blessed are they which are called to the mar-
riage-supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto
me, These are the true sayings of God. Her-
mas is informed: “When (t) the structure
 “of

(q) *Nonne vides contra te turr̄m magnam, quae aedifica-*
tur super aquas, lapidibus quadratis splendidis? V. iii. §. 2.

(r) *In quadrato enim edificabatur turr̄s.* Ibid.

(s) *Lapides quidem illi quadrati, et albi, convenientes in*
commisuris suis, ii sunt Apostoli, et Episcopi, et Doctores,
et Ministri. V. iii. §. 5.

(t) *Cum ergo consummata fuerit structura turr̄s, omnes*
final

A. D. " of the tower is finished, they shall feast
 100. " together near the tower, and shall glorify
 " God, because the structure of the tower
 " is finished." And soon after, " Say unto
 " them, that all these things are true, and
 " that there is nothing in them that is not
 " true."

5. In the *Revelation* is frequent mention of the *book of life*. Ch. iii. 5. *I will not blot his name out of the book of life.* xii. 8. *whose names are not written in the book of life.* See also xvii. 8. xx. 15. — *Hermas* is required to admonish his sons. " For the (u) Lord " knows they will repent with all their " heart, and he will write thee in the book " of life." Others read: *They shall be written in the book of life.* Again: " Keep " (x) the commandments of the Lord, " and thou shalt be approved, and shalt be " written in the number of those that keep " his commandments."

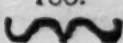
6. In *Rev.* vii. 9. *After this I beheld, and lo a great multitude — stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands.* *Hermas* says:

simul epulabuntur juxta turrim, et honorificabunt Deum. — Dic illis, quod haec omnia sunt vera, et nihil extra veritatem est. V. iii. §. 4.

(u) *Vif.* i. §. 3.

(x) *Sim.* v. §. 3.

(y) *T*
sunt autem
viros nun
(z) *Sir*



says: "Then (*y*) the angel of the Lord
 " commanded crowns to be brought, made
 " as of palms. And the angel crowned
 " those men, — and commanded them to
 " go into the tower." The writer of the
Revelation is soon after informed, who these
 are. v. 14. *He said to me: These are they*
which came out of great tribulation, and have
washed their robes, and made them white in
the blood of the Lamb. In *Hermas* we have
 a like explication. "But (*z*) who then,
 " Lord, said I, are they who enter into the
 " tower crowned? He saies to me: All who
 " having striven with the Devil, have over-
 " come him, these are crowned. And
 " these are they who have suffered hard
 " things that they might keep the law."
 Again, *Rev.* iii. 5. *He that overcometh, the*
same shall be clothed in white raiment. vi. 11.
And white robes were given unto every one of
them. *Hermas* says of the persons before-
 mentioned, and of some others: "For (*a*)
 " they had the same garment, which was
 " white as snow, with which he com-
 " manded them to go into the tower." And
 presently

(*y*) Tunc nuncius domini coronas iussit adferri. Allatae
 sunt autem coronae velut ex palmis factae; et coronavit eos
 viros nuncius — et iussit eos ire in turrim. *Sim.* viii. §. 2.

(*z*) *Sim.* viii. §. 3.

(*a*) *Sim.* viii. §. 2.

A. D. presently after of some others: "He gave
 100. " them a white garment, and so sent them
 " away into the tower."

7. In the book of the *Revelation* is mention made of a *new name*, and a *new city*.
 Ch. ii. 17. *To him that overcometh will I give a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth it.* iii. 12. *Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, and I will write upon him my new name.*
 In *Hermas*: "The (*b*) Son of God is in-
 " deed more ancient than any creature.
 " But the gate is therefore new, because
 " (*c*) he appeared in the last daies in the (*d*)
 " fullnesse of time, that they who shall at-
 " tain to salvation may by it enter into the
 " kingdom of God. — No man shall enter
 " into the kingdom of God, but he who
 " shall receive the name of the Son of God.
 " For, if you would enter into any city,
 " and

(*b*) Simil. ix. §. 12.

(*c*) Quia in consummatione in novissimis diebus apparuit, ut qui affecuturi sunt salutem, per eam intrent in regnum Dei.

(*d*) And here is a reference to *Gal.* iv. 4. or rather to *Eph.* i. 9. 10. At least, it is the doctrine of those texts.

“ and that city should be encompassed with
 “ a wall, and had only one gate; could you
 “ enter into that city, but by that one
 “ gate? — So neither can any enter into the
 “ kingdom of God, but only by the name
 “ of his Son, who is most dear to him.”

A. D.

100.

8. I forbear to transcribe any more. But this book of *Hermas* may be of use to explain divers things in the first epistle of St. *John*, and the book of the *Revelation*. And one may be apt to conclude, they were all writ about the same time.

XLIV. The allusions which I have here produced from *Hermas* relate to these several books of the New Testament: The Gospels of *Matthew*, *Luke*, and *John*. And for *Mark's* Gospel numb. xxv. may be observed: The *Acts*, the epistle to the *Romans*; first and second to the *Corinthians*; the epistles to the *Galatians*, *Ephesians*, *Philippians*, *Colossians*; first to the *Thessalonians*, second to *Timothie*; to the *Hebrews*, the epistle of *James*, first and second of *Peter*, the epistles of *John*, *Jude*, and the book of the *Revelation*.

The sum of
his testi-
monie.

If the reader is desirous to distinguish these allusions into those which are more, and those which are less probable; I hope,
 he

A. D. ^{100.} he will be willing to place in the former rank the allusions to the Gospels of *Matthew*, *Luke*, and *John*, especially those to the two former. I would likewise willingly place here the allusions to the *Acts*, the epistle to the *Romans*, the first to the *Corinthians*, the epistle to the *Ephesians*, and the epistle of *James*. And all the rest deserve consideration, except that I think those to the *Galatians*, *Philippians*, first to the *Thessalonians*, second to *Timothie*, and the epistle to the *Hebrews* some of the least material.

Here are certainly many allusions to our genuine books of the New Testament, which shew the great respect these writings were in, though they are not expressly cited. But the reason is, that it was not suitable to the nature of the work to quote books. The only quotation in *Hermas* is in this (e) manner. *The Lord is nigh to them that turn to him, as it is written in Heldam and Modad, who prophesied to the people in the wilderness.* But it is reasonable to suppose, this is not a *Christian*, but a *Jewish* writing. *Eldad* and *Modad* are mentioned among the Apocryphal books of the Old Testament in the *Synopsis Scripturae*, ascribed to *Athanasius*, but not

Comp.
Numb. xi.
26. 27.

(e) *Vis.* iii. §. 3.

not his. It was no unusual thing for the ancient *Christians* to quote *Jewish*, as well as *Heathen* books, without intending to give them any authority. Finally, I do not perceive in this work of *Hermas* any allusions to any apocryphal Gospels, or other apocryphal books of the New Testament. It is certain, no such books are here quoted.

A. D.
100.
~~~~~





## CHAP. V.

### St. IGNATIUS.

#### *His Historie.*

**A. D.** **100.** **I**GNATIUS was Bishop of *Antioch* in *Syria*, the later part of the first, and the begining of the second centurie. He is said by some to have been the child, whom our Lord took in his arms, and set in the midst of his disciples, as an emblem of humility. But for this story there is no foundation in the earliest antiquity.

Matth.  
xviii.  
Mark ix.

*Eusebe* (a) in his Ecclesiastical Historie says, "That *Euodius* having been the first Bishop of *Antioch*, *Ignatius* succeeded him." With whom *St. Jerome* (b) agrees. In his Chronicle *Eusebe* places the ordination of *Ignatius* in the year 69. after the death of *Peter* and *Paul* at *Rome*. Nevertheless some think, that *Ignatius* was ordained by *Peter*: and suppose, that *Euodius* and *Ignatius* were both

(a) *L. 3. cap. 22.*

(b) *De Vir. Ill. n. 16.*

Cha  
both  
time  
of th  
death  
*Ignat*  
succee  
Lord  
he wa  
tles.  
versed  
fectly  
the +  
Befi  
this go  
concern  
But th  
things,  
tenth  
*Tillemo*  
*Loyd*,  
*cius*, in  
Havi  
age of  
(c) *T. i.*  
† *Ib. p.*  
(d) *Me*  
(e) *Hisp*  
(f) *Diff*  
(g) *Crit*  
(b) *Hisp*  
(i) *Bibl.*

both Bishops of *Antioch* at one and the same time; the one of the *Jewish*, and the other of the *Gentil Christians*: but that after the death of *Euodius*, they all came to be under *Ignatius*, as their Bishop. If *Ignatius* only succeeded *Euodius* about the year of our Lord 70, it may be reasonably concluded, he was acquainted with several of the Apostles. And St. (c) *Chrysostom* says, *he conversed familiarly with them, and was perfectly acquainted with their doctrine*: and had the † hands of Apostles laid upon him.

Beside the Bishoprick, the martyrdom of this good man is another of those few things concerning him, which are not contradicted. But the time of it, as well as some other things, is disputed. *Du Pin* places it in the tenth of *Trajan*, A. D. 107, as does (d) *Tillemont*, and (e) *Cave*. But (f) *Pearson*, *Loyd*, (g) *Pagi*, (h) *Le Clerc*, (i) *Fabrianus*, in 116.

Having given this general account of the age of *Ignatius*, I shall next transcribe the

L

most

(c) *T. i. Hom. 42. in Ignat. p. 562. c.*

† *Ib. p. 563. B.*

(d) *Mem. Eccl. Tom. 2. p. 2. Ignace Art. ix.*

(e) *Hist. Lit.*

(f) *Dissertat. de anno quo S. Ignatius condemnatus.*

(g) *Critic. in Baron. 107. n. 3. Sc.*

(h) *Hist. E. 116. n. 7.*

(i) *Bibl. Gr. T. v. p. 39.*



A. D. <sup>107.</sup> most ancient testimonies concerning him and his epistles. And then I shall make a few remarks.

We have this passage in (k) *Irenaeus*:  
 “As one of our people, for his testimonie  
 “of God condemned to wild beasts, said:  
 “*I am the wheat of God, and ground by the*  
 “*teeth of wild beasts, that I may be found to*  
 “*be pure bread.*” Which words are in §. 4. of *Ignatius’s* epistle to the *Romans*. And this passage is also cited from *Irenaeus* by (l) *Eusebe*. Who in another (m) place likewise says: “*Irenaeus* mentions *Justin Martyr*,  
 “and *Ignatius*, making use of testimonies  
 “out of their writings.”

We meet with *Ignatius* twice mentioned by *Origen*. “Finally, says (n) he, I remember, that one of the saints, *Ignatius*  
 “by name, has said of Christ: *My love is*  
 “*crucified.*” Which words are in the same epistle to the *Romans*, §. vii. Again: “I  
 “have (o) observed it elegantly written in  
 “an epistle of a Martyr, I mean *Ignatius*,  
 “second Bishop of *Antioch* after *Peter*, that  
 “*the virginity of Mary was unknown to the*  
 “*prince*”

(k) *Advers. Haer. l. v. cap. 28.*

(l) *H. E. L. 3. c. 36.*

(m) *L. v. c. 8. p. 173.*

(n) *Prolog. in Cant. Cantic. p. 496. T. i. Basil. 1571.*

(o) *Hom. vi. in Luc. Tom. 2. p. 214.*

# Chap. V. St. IGNATIUS.

147

"prince of this world." See the epistle to *A. D.*  
*Ephesians*, §. xix. 107.

*Eusebe*, (p) beside what has been already taken from him, says in another place, after the mention of *Polycarp* and *Papias*, as contemporaries: "At the same time also flourished *Ignatius*, who is still highly honored, being the second in the succession of the church of *Antioch* after *Peter*. It is said, that he was sent from *Syria* to *Rome* to be devoured by wild beasts, for the testimonie of Christ. And making his journey through *Asia* under a strong guard, he confirmed the churches in every city by his discourses, and especially cautioned them against the heresies then springing up, and gaining ground. And exhorted them to adhere to the tradition of the Apostles. And for the greater security he also put down his instructions in writing. Therefore when he came to *Smyrna*, where *Polycarp* was, he wrote an epistle to the church at *Ephesus*, another to the church in *Magnesia* upon the [river] *Meander* — and another to the church at *Trallium* — and beside these, he wrote also to the church at *Rome*.

L 2

" [from

(p) H. E. l. 3. cap. 36.

A. D.

107.

[from which *Eusebe* quotes a long passage.]

“ These things he wrote from the foremen-  
 “ tioned city to those churches. After-  
 “ wards removing from *Smyrna* he wrote to  
 “ the *Philadelphians* from *Troas*, and to the  
 “ church of *Smyrna*, and in particular to  
 “ their president *Polycarp*.” *Eusebe* proceeds  
 there not only to refer to a passage of this  
 epistle to *Polycarp*, but quotes also distinctly  
 a passage from the epistle to the church of  
*Smyrna*. And then puts down a passage of  
 the epistle of *Polycarp* to the *Philippians*, in  
 the later part of which he says to them:  
 “ The epistles of *Ignatius* sent by him to  
 “ us, together with what other have come  
 “ to our hands, we have sent to you, which  
 “ are subjoined to this epistle. By which  
 “ you may be greatly profited. For they  
 “ treat of faith and patience, and of all  
 “ things pertaining to edification in our  
 “ Lord.” And thus we have seen also *Polycarp*’s  
 testimonie in general to these epistles,  
 who collected them.

To the same purpose St. *Jerome* in his  
 book of \* *Illustrious Men*. “ *Ignatius*, the  
 “ third Bishop of the church of *Antioch*  
 “ after the Apostle *Peter*, in the persecution  
 “ under

\* Cap. 16.

Char

“ unc

“ bea

“ wh

“ Biss

“ *sian*

“ to t

“ and

“ to t

“ in p

I fl

the an

to the

Bes

*Eusebe*

epistles

*tius*.

suppos

I think

Of

*Jerome*

the la

and an

cept N

others,

ral opi

are int

by far

*natius*.

“ under *Trajan* was condemned to wild <sup>A. D.</sup>  
 “ beasts. And when he came to *Smyrna*, <sup>107.</sup>  
 “ where *Polycarp* the disciple of *John* was  
 “ Bishop; he wrote an epistle to the *Ephe-*  
 “ *sians*, another to the *Magnesians*, a third  
 “ to the *Trallians*, a fourth to the *Romans* :  
 “ and when he was gone thence, he wrote  
 “ to the *Philadelphians*, the *Smyrneans*, and  
 “ in particular to *Polycarp*.”

I shall transcribe no more testimonies of the ancients, but refer the reader for the rest to the *Patres Apostolici* of *Le Clerc*.

Beside those seven epistles mentioned by *Eusebe* and *Jerome*, there are several other epistles, which have been ascribed to *Ignatius*. But they are now almost universally supposed by learned men to be spurious, and I think are plainly so.

Of these seven, mentioned by *Eusebe* and *Jerome*, there are two editions; one called the *larger*, and oftentimes the *interpolated*; and another, called the *smaller*. And, except Mr. *Whiston*, and perhaps some few others, who may follow him, it is the general opinion of learned men, that the *larger* are interpolated, and that the *smaller* have by far the best title to the name of *Ignatius*.



A. D. <sup>107.</sup> I have carefully compared the two editions, and am very well satisfied upon that comparison, that the larger are an interpolation of the smaller, and not the smaller an epitome or abridgement of the larger. I desire no better evidence in a thing of this nature.

And the quotations of *Ignatius* in the most ancient Christian writers do also better agree with the smaller than the larger epistles, as may be seen in Arch-bishop *Usher's* (9) dissertations.

But whether the smaller themselves are the genuine writings of *Ignatius*, Bishop of *Antioch*, is a question, that has been much disputed, and has employed the pens of the ablest critics. And whatever positiveness some may have shewn on either side, I must own, I have found it a very difficult question. I shall however deliver my opinion, formed upon the enquiry I have made into this controversy. And every one will be able to judge of it by the testimonies here alleged.

I make little doubt, but the smaller epistles, which we now have, are, for the main, the same epistles of *Ignatius*, which

were pretty time.

it is di sage words might

of his bear naeus i favour

Com

I have Eusebe great f epistles

me pro genuine

If th

and ex

with th

reasona

than to

especial

we now

† Beau

smaller ep

lated. See

p. 380. N

were read by *Eusebe*, and which, it seems pretty plain from *Origen*, were extant in his time. As for the quotation from *Irenaeus*, it is disputable, whether he there cites a passage of a *writing*, or only mentions some words or expressions of *Ignatius*, which might be spoken by him upon the near view of his martyrdom. But though that may bear some dispute, the testimonie of *Irenaeus* is not altogether without it's weight in favour of the *epistles*.

Considering then these testimonies, which I have alleged from *Irenaeus*, *Origen*, and *Eusebe*, and also the internal characters of great simplicity and piety, which are in these epistles; (I mean the *smaller* :) it appears to me probable, that they are for the main the genuine epistles of *Ignatius*.

If there be only ‡ some few sentiments and expressions, which seem inconsistent with the true age of *Ignatius*; it is more reasonable to suppose them to be additions, than to reject the epistles themselves entirely; especially in this scarcity of copies, which we now labor under. As the interpolations

L 4

of

‡ *Beausobre*, though he favors the genuineness of the smaller epistles, suspects that even they have been interpolated. See *Hist. de Manich. T. i. p. 378. Note (3) and p. 380. Note (2).*

A. D. <sup>107.</sup> of the larger epistles are plainly the work of some (r) *Arian*, so even the smaller epistles may have been tampered with by the *Arians*, or the Orthodox, or both: though I do not affirm, there are in them any considerable corruptions or alterations.

The time of these epistles of *Ignatius* is determined by that of his martyrdom. For they were written, after he was condemned to the wild beasts; and while he was going a prisoner from *Antioch* to *Rome*. Concerning this I have already mentioned two different opinions. *Pearson*, *Loyd*, and *Pagi*, are positive for the year 115, or 116. *Basnage* however (s) puts the year of *Ignatius's* death among the obscurities of chronologie. Indeed those learned men have for their opinion no other grounds but the testimonie of *Malala*, an author of the sixth centurie, of no great account in other matters; and the *Acts*, or *Martyrdom* of *Ignatius*, which say, that he was condemned by *Trajan* in person at *Antioch*. But it being certain, as these learned men have shewn, that *Trajan* was not

(r) *Vid. Usser. Dissert. cap. 12. 15. Grabe Spicileg. Patrum sec. ii. p. 225. 226. et Clerici Dissertat. alteram. §. xi. apud Patres Apost. edit. 1724.*

(s) *Annal. 107. §. vi.*

(t) *V. S. (u) S. (x) A. apud Gr. 1724.*

## Chap. V. St. IGNATIUS.

153

not at *Antioch*, before the year 112; therefore they conclude, that *Ignatius* was not condemned, at the soonest, before that year. But the genuinnesse of those Acts may be well disputed for (t) divers reasons. And these Acts themselves say, that *Ignatius* was martyred at *Rome*, when *Senecio* and *Sura* were Consuls, who were so in the year 107, the tenth of *Trajan*. Since therefore *Eusebe* says nothing of *Ignatius* being condemned by *Trajan* himself at *Antioch*, and his death is placed by him (u) in the tenth of *Trajan*, I the rather incline to that opinion: which indeed appears to me much the more probable.

D. A.

107.

These epistles are now extant in *Greek*, and in an ancient *Latin* Version. The later was published by A. B. *Usher* in 1664. In 1646. *Isaac Vossius* published six of the seven epistles in *Greek* from a manuscript at *Florence*. The epistle to the *Romans*, which was wanting there, has been since published in *Greek* by *Ruinart* (x) from a manuscript at *Paris*.

To

(t) Vid. *Basnage Ann. Pol. E.* 107. §. 8.

(u) See his *Chronicle*.

(x) *Ap. Acta Martyr. sincera* p. 13. et seq. Extat etiam apud *Grabe spicileg. Patr. T. ii. Patres Apost. Cleric. edit.* 1724.



A. D.

107.

To conclude: As the epistles, which we now have of *Ignatius*, are allowed to be genuine by a great number of learned men, whose opinion I think to be founded upon probable arguments, (as I have also shewn in the testimonies here alleged) I now proceed to quote them as his.

*His testimonie to the Books of the New Testament.*

In all the epistles of *Ignatius* there is but one book of the N. T. expressly named by him, which is St. *Paul's* epistle to the *Ephesians*. For writing to the *Ephesians* he says: §. xii.

*Ephes.*

“ I. Ye (y) are the companions [*in the mysteries of the gospel*] of *Paul* the sanctified, the martyr, [or highly commended,] deservedly most happy, — who throughout all his epistle makes mention of you in *Christ Jesus*.”

He means plainly the epistle of *Paul* to the *Ephesians*, in which (x) the Apostle praises and

(y) Παῦλος συμμύσαι τῷ μεμαρτυρημένῳ, ὃς ἐν πάσῃ ἐπιστολῇ μνημονεύει ὑμῶν ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησοῦ.

(x) That is according to the sense of *Valesius*, whose note upon the place is to this effect: Frustra sunt — viri literati, non videntes ἐν πάσῃ ἐπιστολῇ esse in tota epistola, ad *Ephesios* nimirum scripta, qua illos laudat valde ac semper commendat, nunquam reprehendit Apostolus, ut fuit ab Hieronymo observatum. Which interpretation, so far as I can see, *Pearson* has well defended, and more at large. *Vindic. Ignat.*

# I. Chap. V. St. IGNATIUS.

155

and commends those *Christians*, and never reproveth them.

A. D.

107.

Quota-

P. 2. Cap. x. init. Indeed *μνημονεύω* is seldom used in the sense, in which it is here understood by these learned men, for praising or commending. But that sense of the verb seems to be preserved in the noun *μνημόνευμα* in a passage of *Aristotle* cited by *Stephens* in his *Gr. Thesaurus* V. *Μνημόνευω* — In quem locum haec scribit P. Victorius: *Μνημονεύματα* nisi fallor, appellat elogia, et quae memoriam alicujus ornant. And the verb is used for remembring with affectionate regard in *Hebr. xi. 15.* Καὶ ἐν μέν ἐκείνῃς ἐμνημόνευον, ἀπ' ἧς ἐξήλθεν. — However, the very learned Writer of a *Letter concerning the persons, to whom St. Paul wrote what is called the epistle to the Ephesians*, at the end of *Dr. Benson's History of the first planting the Christian Religion*, thinks, that instead of *ὅς μνημονεύει*. — We should read *ὅς μνημονεύει ὑμῶν*. meaning, that *Ignatius himself mentioned the Ephesians in every epistle*. But that conjecture appears to be without ground: forasmuch as in all the editions of *Ignatius's epistles* the verb is in the third person: not only in the Greek of the smaller epistles, which I translate, but likewise in the old Latin version. Qui in omni epistola memoriam facit vestri in Jesu Christo. And in the Greek interpolated epistles: Ὅς παύσῃ ἐν ταῖς δεήσεσιν αὐτῆς μνημονεύει ὑμῶν. In like manner in the Latin version of the same: Qui semper in suis orationibus memor est vestri. Referring, as may be supposed, to *Eph. i. 16.* and perhaps to some other parts of the same epistle. There is therefore no various reading. And a new one ought not to be admitted, unless the sense should require it: which it does not appear to do here. For *Ignatius* is extolling the *Ephesians*. And one part of their glorie is, that the Apostle throughout his epistle to them had treated them in an honorable manner. The same is observed by some other ancient writers, who supposed this epistle to have been sent to the *Ephesians*, as may be seen in *Pearson*. Indeed *Ignatius* has mentioned the *Ephesians*, in every one of his epistles, except to *Polycarp*. But so he has likewise the church of *Antioch*, in every letter, not excepting that to *Polycarp*. It is likely therefore, that if *Ignatius* intended to say, that he mentioned the *Ephesians* in all his epistles, he would have added: *As I do also the church of Antioch in Syria, of which I am not worthy.*

And

A. D.

107.

Matthew.

## Quotations and Allusions.

N. T.

Ignatius.

II. Matth. iii. 15.

II. Smyrn. §. 1.

For (a) thus it becomes  
us to fulfil all righte-  
ousnesse.

Baptized of John,  
that all (b) righteous-  
nesse might be fulfilled  
by him.

III. Matth. x. 16.

III. Polycarp. §. 2.

Be (c) yet therefore wise  
as serpents, and harm-

Be (d) wise as a ser-  
pent, in all things,  
lest

And what seems to determine, this passage to belong to Paul, and not to himself, together with the constant unvaried reading of the place, is the stile of Ignatius in many other places, where he carries on his sentences with divers *ὅς*, & *ὅτι*, & *ἵνα*. I shall give an instance or two. *Vid. ad Magnes. §. viii. — Ad Philad. §. i.* "Ὁν ἐπίσκοπον ἔγνω ἐκ αὐτοῦ ἐαυτοῦ, — ἀλλ' ἐν ἀγάπῃ θεῷ πατρί καὶ κυρίῳ Ἰησοῦ χριστῷ. Ἐκαστὸς πληγμὰι τὴν ἐπιείκειαν, ὅς σιγῶν πλείονα δύναται τῶν μέγαλα λαλῶντων. *Et ib. §. xi.* Περὶ δὲ φίλων τῷ διακόνῳ ἀπὸ κιλικίας, ἀνδρὸς μεμαρτυρημένῳ, ὅς καὶ νῦν ἐν λόγῳ θεῷ ὑπηρετεῖ μοι, ἅμα ῥεῶ — ἀνδρὶ ἐκλεκτῷ, ὅς ἀπὸ συρίας μοι ἀκολουθεῖ, ἀπολαζόμενος τῷ εἶπῳ. οἱ καὶ μαρτυροῦσιν ὑμῖν. καὶ τῷ θεῷ εὐχαριστῶ ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν, ὅτι ἐδέξασθε αὐτοὺς, ὡς καὶ ὑμεῖς ὁ κύριος. Which last passage shews also, that, if after having first spoken of Paul, Ignatius had said any thing of himself, particularly, that he mentioned them in all his epistles, he would have said: καὶ γὰρ: as indeed the nature of the thing requires, he should.

All which therefore seems to render it probable, that Ignatius had a copie of this epistle with an inscription of it to the Ephesians. But that this will determine the controversy, concerning the persons to whom it was sent, I do not say.

(a) Οὕτω γὰρ πρέπον ἐστὶν ἡμῖν πληρῶσαι πᾶσαν δικαιοσύνην.

(b) Ἴνα πληρωθῇ πᾶσα δικαιοσύνη ὑπ' αὐτοῦ.

(c) Γίνεσθε ἔν θρόνιμοι ὡς οἱ ὄφεις, καὶ ἀκέραιοι ὡς αἱ περιστεραί.

(d) Φρόνιμοι γίνεσθε ὡς ὁ ὄφις, καὶ ἀκέραιοι ὡσεὶ περιστεραί.

Cha  
lefs

IV  
For  
know  
V  
Ever

my  
has  
be ro

VI

19. I  
agree

touchi

they

be do

my

in bea

where

are g

in my

In th

VII

(e) Ἐν  
δένδρον  
(g) Π  
ἐκ δὲ θήσε

less as doves.

and harmless as a *A. D.*  
dove. 107.

IV. Matth. xii. 33.

For (e) the tree is known by his fruit.

IV. Ephes. §. 14.

The (f) tree is manifest by it's fruit.

V. Matth. xv. 13.

Every (g) plant which my heavenly Father has not planted, shall be rooted up.

V. Trall. §. xi.

"These (b) are not a plant of the Father."

He has the same expression in (i) another epistle.

VI. Matth. xviii.

19. If two of you shall agree on earth, as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. 20. For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

IV. Ephes. §. 5.

For if the prayer of one or two be of such force; how much more that of the Bishop, and the whole church?

VII. Matth. xix.

VII. Smyrn. §. 6.

12.

(e) Ἐκ γὰρ τῆ καρπῦ τὸ δένδρον γινώσκειται.

(g) Πᾶσα φυτὴν — ἐκ-  
ρίθησεται.

(f) Φανερόν τὸ δένδρον ἀπὸ τῆ καρπῦ αὐτῆς.

(b) Οὗτοι γὰρ ἐκείσιν φυ-  
τεῖα παλῶς.

(i) Ad Philadelph. §. 3.



A. D. 12. He (k) that is a- He (l) that receives it,  
 107. ble to receive it, let let him receive it.  
 him receive it.

Ignatius however is not speaking of the same thing with our Saviour, but of quite another matter.

VIII. To the *Philadelphians*, §. 6. He speaks of some, " who seem to him to be but as monuments and sepulchres of the dead, upon which are written only the names of men." Which may be thought to refer to *Matth.* xxiii. 27, &c. but I do not think it material.

IX. To the *Magnesians*, §. 9. " And therefore he, whom they [the Prophets] justly waited for, being come, raised them up from the dead."

He is here supposed to refer to *Matth.* xxvii. 52. But I have taken several passages that plainly refer to *Matthew's* Gospel: and therefore need not insist upon it. Moreover *Ephes.* §. 19. He speaks of a bright star, by which our Lord was manifested to the world: where he is supposed to refer to *Matth.* ii. and undoubtedly confirms that historie.

N. T.

(k) ὁ δυνάμενος λαβεῖν  
 λαβεῖτω.

(l) ὁ λαβὼν λαβεῖτω.

(m) ὁ λαβὼν λαβεῖτω.

N. T.

Ignatius.

A. D.

107.

X. Luke xiv. 27.

X. Romans, §. 5.

Luke.

If any man come to me, and hate not his father and mother, — yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.

“ Now I begin to be a disciple.”

It has been thought, that he refers to the opposite text in St. Luke. But I think, it can hardly be determined, what particular text he refers to.

XI. John iii. 8.

XI. Philadelph. §. John.

The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof: but (m) canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goes. So is every one that is born of the spirit.

7. — Yet the Spirit is not deceived, being from God: for (n) it knows whence it comes, and whither it goes, and reproveth secret things.

XII. John viii. 29.

XII. Magnes. §. 8.

And he that hath sent me is with me: the father has not left me

That there is one God, who has manifested himself thro' alone:

N. T.

ἐρίτω.

(m) Ἀλλ' ἂν οἶδας ποῦθεν ἐρχεται, καὶ ποῦ πάγει.

(n) Οἶδεν γὰρ ποῦθεν ἐρχεται καὶ ποῦ πάγει. κ. λ.

A. D. alone: (o) for I do al-  
 107.  
 ways those things that  
 please him.

Jesus Christ his Son:  
 — who in (p) all  
 things pleased him  
 that sent him.

*Note:* The words I omit here (q) are these: *Who is his eternal word, not coming forth from silence.* Which last expression has afforded a strong objection to the genuineness of these epistles. If the whole be genuine, there is probably a reference to *John i. 1.* in that character of *eternal word*. For my own part, I have (r) suspected the whole which I have omitted to be an interpolation. The connexion is best preserved without those words.

N. T.

XIII. John x. 9.

*I am the door, by me  
 if any man enter in,  
 he shall be saved, &c.*

Ignatius.

XIII. Philad. §.

ix. He [Christ] is the  
 door of the Father,  
 by which enter in  
 Abraham, and Isaac,  
 and Jacob, and the  
 Apostles, and the  
 church.

XIV.

(o) Ὅτι ἐγὼ τὰ ἄρετα αὐ-  
 τῷ ποιῶ πάντοτε.

(q) Ὅς ἐστὶν αὐτῷ λόγος, αἰδῶ. ἐκ ἀπὸ στήνης παρελθόντα

(r) *Vid. Voss. not. in loc.*

(p) Ὅς κατὰ πάντα εὐκρί-  
 σης τῷ πέμψαντι αὐτόν.

(s) Ὅτι

XIV. John xii. 49.

*For I have not spoken of myself, but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. See Ch. v. 19. x. 30. xiv.*

11.

XV. John xvi. 28.

*I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.*

XVI. In John's Gospel, Ch. xii. 31.

xiv. 30. xv. 11. Satan is called the (s) Prince of this world.

XVII. Acts x. 41.

M

(1) Ὁ ἄρχων τοῦ κόσμου τούτου.

XIV. Magnes. §. 7.

As therefore the Lord did nothing without the Father, being united to him; neither by himself, nor by his Apostles: &c.

A. D.

107.

XV. The same: As

to one Jesus Christ, who proceedeth from one Father, and exists in one, and is returned to him.

XVI. Rom. §. 7.

"The (t) prince of this world would fain carry me away." He has the same expression in another epistle. (u)

XVII. Smyrn. §. A. A.

Who

(t) Ὁ ἄρχων τοῦ αἰῶνος τούτου διαρπάσαι με θέλειται,

(u) Φεύγετε ἐνέδρας τοῦ ἀρχόντος τοῦ αἰῶνος τούτου. ad Philad. §. 6. vid. et Ephes. §. 17. 19.



A. D. —Who (x) did eat  
 107. and drink with him,  
 after he arose from the  
 dead.

Comp. Luke xxiv.

42. 43.

Romans.

XVIII. Rom. xv.

7. Wherefore (x) re-  
 ceive ye one another,  
 as Christ also has re-  
 ceived us to the glory  
 of God.

Though the original word for *receive* is not the same with that in *Paul*, that alone ought not to render the reference doubtful. *Ignatius* used his memorie. And these two words, προσλαμβάνομαι and δέχομαι are both used in this sense in the N. T.

XIX. In §. v. of his epistle to the *Romans* is supposed to be an allusion to Rom. viii. 38. 39.

St. *Paul*, Rom. i. 3. 4. Concerning his Son *Jesus Christ* our Lord, who (b) was made

(x) Οἵτινες συνεάγομεν, καὶ συνεπίαμεν αὐτῷ μετὰ τὸ ἀναστῆναι αὐτὸν ἐκ νεκρῶν.

(x) Διὸ προσλαμβάνετε ἀλλήλους, καθὼς καὶ ὁ Χριστὸς προσελάβετο ἡμᾶς εἰς δόξαν Θεοῦ.

(b) Τὸ γενομένον ἐκ σπέρματος Δαβὶδ κατὰ σάρκα.

3. But (y) after his resurrection he did eat and drink with them.

XVIII. *Philad.* §.

11. And I give thanks to God for you (a) that ye have received them, as the Lord you.

(y) Μετὰ δὲ τὴν ἀνάστασιν συνεφαγεν αὐτοῖς καὶ συνέπιπεν.

(a) — ὅτι ἐδέξαθε αὐτοὺς ὡς καὶ ὑμεῖς ὁ κύριος.

of the  
 and d  
 Ignat  
 " wa  
 " co  
 " acc  
 Again  
 the se  
 That  
 race  
 takes  
 from  
 not sa

Now  
 brethe  
 of our  
 Christ,  
 speak  
 and th  
 division

(c) "Ο  
 (d) "Ε  
 (e) —

καὶ, πᾶσι  
 χρίσματα  
 μένου ἐν τῇ  
 αὐτῇ γυναι

*of the seed of David according to the flesh, A. D. and declared to be the Son of God with power. 107.*

Ignatius Smyrn. §. 1. says: " Our Lord " was truly (c) of the race of David, ac- " cording to the flesh, the Son of God, " according to the will and power of God." Again he says, *Ephes. §. 18.* He (d) was of the seed of David. Once more *ib. §. 20.* That he was, according to the flesh, of the race [or family] of David. Whether he takes this from the epistle to the Romans, or from the genealogies in the Gospels, I cannot say.

N. T.

Ignatius.

XX. 1 Cor. i. 10.

XX. *Ephes. §. 2.* 1 Corinth.

Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that (e) ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you;

It is fitting therefore, that in all manner of waies ye should glorify Jesus Christ, who has glorified you, that (f) in one obedience ye may be

M 2

but

(c) Ὅσα ἐκ γενέως Δαβὶδ κατὰ σάρκα.

(d) Ἐκ σπέρματος μὲν Δαβὶδ.

(e) — ἵνα τὸ αὐτὸ λέγῃτε, πάντες, καὶ μὴ ᾖ ἐν ὑμῖν χίσματα, ἥτε δὲ κατηρτισμένοι ἐν τῷ αὐτῷ νοί, καὶ ἐν τῇ αὐτῇ γνώμῃ.

(f) ἵνα ἐν μιᾷ ὑποταγῇ ᾖτε κατηρτισμένοι τῷ αὐτῷ νοί, καὶ τῇ αὐτῇ γνώμῃ, καὶ τὸ αὐτὸ λέγῃτε πάντες περὶ τῆ αὐτῆς.

A. D. but that ye be perfectly joined together  
 107. in the same mind, and in the same judgement.

perfectly joined together, in the same mind, and in the same judgement, and may all speak the same thing of the same thing.

XXI. 1 Cor. i. 18.

For the preaching of the crosse is to them that perish, foolishnesse: but unto us that are saved, it is the power of God. 19. For it is writen, — I will bring to nothing the (g) understanding of the prudent. 20. Where is the wise? Where is the scribe? Where is the disputer of this world? But we preach Christ, unto the Jews a stumbling block, and unto the

XXI. Ephes. §. 18.

Let my life be sacrificed for the doctrine (b) of the crosse, which is a stumbling block unto unbelievers, but to us salvation, and life eternal. Where is the wise? Where is the disputer? Where is the boasting of them that are called prudent?

(g) Τὴν σύνεσιν τῶν συνε-  
 τῶν ἀθετήσω — Πῦ σοφός;  
 πῦ γραμματεὺς; πῦ συζητήτης  
 τῶ αἰῶνι τέτε — ἡμεῖς δὲ  
 κηρύσσομεν Χριστὸν ἐσαυραμέ-  
 νον, Ἰουδαίοις σκάνδαλον. κ. λ.

(b) — Τῷ σαυρῷ, ὃ ἐστὶν  
 σκάνδαλον τοῖς ἀπίστοις, τῷ  
 μὲν δὲ σωτηρία, καὶ ζωὴ αἰῶ-  
 νος. Πῦ σοφός; ποῦ συζη-  
 τητής; ποῦ χαύχῃσις τῶ  
 λεγομένων συνετῶν;

Greek

(i) Ἄλλοι  
 καίτοι.

(i) Ἐκκα-  
 παλαιὰν ζῶ-  
 ῶντα —  
 καὶ ἐν ζύμῃ  
 κακίας

Chap. V. St. IGNATIUS.

165

A. D.

107.

Greeks foolishnesse. 24.

But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God.

XXII. I Cor. iv.

4. For I (i) know nothing by myself, yet am I not hereby justified.

XXIII. I Cor. v.7.

Purge out therefore (l) the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For Christ our passover is sacrificed for us. 8. Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickednesse.

XXII. Rom. §. 5.

But (k) I am not therefore justified.

XXIII. Magnes. §.

x. Cast (m) away therefore the evil leaven which is waxed old and fowre, and be transformed into the new leaven, which is Jesus Christ.

M 3

XXIV.

(i) Ἄλλ' ἐκ ἐν τῷ δέδι-  
καίωμαι.

(l) Ἐκκαθάρατε οὖν τὴν  
παλαιὰν ζύμην, ἵνα ᾗτε νέον  
ἄραμα — ὥς ἐορτάζωμεν,  
καὶ ἐν ζύμῃ παλαιᾷ, μὴδ' ἐν  
ζύμῃ κακίας καὶ πονηρίας. κ. λ.

(k) Ἄλλ' ἔπαρά τοῦτο δε-  
δικάιωμαι.

(m) Ὑπέρθετε οὖν τὴν κα-  
κὴν ζύμην τὴν παλαιωθεῖσαν,  
καὶ ἐνοξίσασαν, καὶ μεταβάλετε  
εἰς νέαν ζύμην, ἧ ἐσιν Ἰησοῦς  
Χριστός.



A. D.

107.

XXIV. 1 Cor. vi.

9. 10. Be not (n) deceived: neither fornicators, — nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

XXV. 1 Cor. xv.

8. And last (p) of all, he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time.

2 Cor.

XXVI. 2 Cor. v.

14. For the love of Christ constrains us —

(n) Μὴ μιλᾶσθε — βασιλείαν Θεοῦ ἢ κληρονομήσουσιν.

(p) Ἐχατον δὲ πάντων, ὡς περὶ τῷ ἐκτρώματι, ὥς δι' ἡμῶν.

XXIV. Ephes. §.

xvi. Be not (o) deceived, my brethren, corrupters of houses [or families] shall not inherit the kingdom of God. See also Philad. §. 3. at the end.

XXV. Rom. §.

ix. For (q) I am not worthy, being the last of them, and one born out of due time. But I have obtained mercy to be some body, if I shall get to God.

It is plain, he imitates Paul's stile.

XXVI. Rom. §.

vi. Him I seek, who died for us: him I

(o) Μὴ πλανᾶσθε — οἰκοφθόροι βασιλείαν Θεοῦ κληρονομήσουσιν.

(q) --- ὧν ἔχατον αὐτῶν, καὶ ἐκτρώμα. ἀλλ' ἡλπημέαι τῷ εἶναι, εἰάν Θεοῦ ἐπιτύχω. Conf. 1 Cor. vii. 25. 1 Tim. i. 13. 16. et Ignat. Smyrn. §. xi. ἔχατον αὐτῶν ὧν.

Ch

15.

for  
whic  
benc  
them  
him  
them

X  
Paul

(r) g  
man,  
Christ  
Father

XX

4. Chr  
no effe  
soever  
fied by  
fallen f

15.

(r) Οὐ  
ἀνδρῶν

15. *And that he died for all, that they which live, should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again.*

desire, who rose again for us.

XXVII. Gal. i. 1.

*Paul an Apostle, not (r) of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father.*

XXVII. Phila-

*delph. §. 1. which Bishop [of the Philadelphians] I know obtained the minis-  
trie for the public, not of himself, nor (s) by men, nor out of vain glory, but by the love of God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.*

XXVIII. Gal. v.

*4. Christ is become of no effect unto you: whosoever of you are justified by the law, ye are fallen from grace.*

XXVIII. Magnes.

*§. viii. For if we still live according to Judaism, we confess we have not received grace.*

M 4

XXIX.

(r) Οὐκ ἀπ' ἀνθρώπων, ἀλλ' ἀπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ.

(s) Οὐκ ἀπὸ ἑαυτοῦ, οὐδὲ δι' ἀνθρώπων, κ. λ.

A. D.

107.  
Eph. f.

XXIX. I think, that *Ignatius* in his salutation of the church of *Ephesus* alludes to *Eph. i. 3. 4. and iii. 19.* But as he has expressly owned the epistle of *St. Paul* to the *Ephesians* [numb. i.] and there are divers other allusions to that epistle to be taken notice of, I omit it.

N. T.

Eph. f.

XXX. *Eph. ii. 22.*  
*In whom ye also are builded for an habitation of God through the Spirit. See ver. 20. 21.*

Ignatius.

XXX. *Ephes. §. ix.*

As being stones of the temple of the Father, prepared for the building of God the Father; drawn up on high by the engine of *Jesus Christ*, which is the crosse, using for a rope the Holy Ghost.

*Smyrn. §. 1.* He may allude also to the foregoing verses of *Ephes. ii.* When he says, "that *Christ* by his passion and resurrection had lifted up a sign for all ages, to his holy and faithful people, whether they be *Jews*, or *Gentils*, in one body of his church".

N. T.

XXXI. *Ephes. iv.*

3. Endeavoring to

Ignatius.

XXXI. *Magnes. §.*

vii. Coming toge-

keep

salu-  
es to  
as ex-  
o the  
divers  
n no-

keep the unity of the Spirit, in the bond of peace. 4. There is one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling. 5. One Lord, one faith.

§. ix.  
es of  
f the  
d for  
f God  
drawn  
y the  
Christ,  
crossie,  
be the

XXXII. Eph. v. 2.

And walk in love, as Christ also has loved us, and has (u) given himself for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God, for a sweet smelling savour.

XXXIII. Eph. v.

25. Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church.

o the  
e says,  
ection  
s holy  
ws, or

nes. §.  
togeth-  
keep

(t) *Μία προσευχή, μία δέησις.* The Arch-Bishop: Have one common prayer, one supplication. Which is according to the larger, or interpolated epistles. But as his Lordship professes to translate the smaller, I think, with submission, it had been better to follow them here also: though by putting the word *common* in *Italic* he has hinted, that it is not in the original.

(u) *Καὶ παρέδωκεν ἑαυτὸν ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν προσφοράν καὶ θυσίαν τῷ Θεῷ.*

ther into one place, <sup>A. D. 107.</sup> let there be one (t) prayer, one supplication, one mind, one hope, in charity and joy undefiled. There is one Lord Jesus Christ.

XXXII. *Ephes.* §.

1. That I may become the disciple of him, (x) who offered himself for us to God, an offering and a sacrifice.

XXXIII. *Polycarp.*

§. v. In like manner, exhort my brethren, in the name of Jesus Christ, to love their

29. For

(x) *Τὸ ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν ἑαυτὸν ἀνενεχόντ' ὁ Θεὸς προσφοράν καὶ θυσίαν.*



A. D. 29. For no man wives, as (z) the Lord  
 107. bateth his own flesh, the church.  
 but nourisheth, and  
 cherisheth it, as (y)  
 the Lord the church.

30. For we are  
 members of his body,  
 of his flesh, and of  
 his bones.

XXXIV. Ephes.  
 vi. 13. Wherefore take  
 unto you the whole ar-  
 mour of God. 14.  
 Stand therefore having  
 your loins girt about  
 with truth, and hav-  
 ing on the breast-plate  
 of righteousness. 16.  
 Above all taking the  
 shield of faith. — 17.  
 And take the helmet  
 of salvation, and the  
 sword of the Spirit,  
 which is the word of  
 God.

(y) Καθὼς καὶ ὁ τῆς ἐκκλη-  
 σίας.

Ephes. §. v. That  
 he may acknowledge  
 by the things ye do,  
 that ye are members  
 of his Son.

XXXIV. Polycarp.  
 §. 6. Let none of  
 you be found a de-  
 ferter, but let your  
 baptism remain, as  
 [your] arms, faith  
 as a helmet, love as  
 a spear, patience as  
 whole armour.

XXXV.

(z) Ὡς ὁ κύριος τὴν ἐκ-  
 κλησίαν.

# Chap. V. St. IGNATIUS.

171

XXXV. Philip. i.

XXXV. Rom. §.

A. D.

21. *For me to live is Christ, and to die (a) is gain.*

vi. He (b) is the gain that is laid up for me.

107. *Philip.*

And that he refers to this text of the *Philippians*, is farther evident, in that he is here entreating the *Romans* not to desire his life, and prevent his suffering for Christ: and would have them consider the *things (c) that straiten him*: or, how he was straitened, as *Paul (d)* also says he was. ver. 23.

N. T.

*Ignatius.*

XXXVI. Philip.

XXXVI. *Philadelph.* §. viii.

ii. 3. *Let (e) nothing be done through strife.*

I beseech you, that (f) ye do nothing through strife, but according to the instruction of Christ.

5. *Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus.*

XXXVII. Col. i.

XXXVII. *Eph.* §. *Colos.*

7. *As ye also learned*

ii. For what con-  
of

(a) Καὶ τὸ ἀποθανεῖν, κέρ-  
δος.

(b) Ὁ δὲ τοκετὸς μοι ἐπί-  
κειται. Ille lucrum mihi ad-  
jacet. Verf. Lat.

(c) Εἰδὼς τὰ συνέχοντά με.

(d) Συνέχομαι γὰρ ἐκ  
τῶν δύο.

(e) Μηδὲν κατὰ ἐρίθειαν  
— τὸτο γὰρ φρονέειν ἐν  
ὑμῖν ὁ καὶ ἐν Χριστῷ Ἰησῷ.

(f) Παρακαλῶ δὲ ὑμᾶς,  
μηδὲν κατὰ ἐρίθειαν τράσσειν,  
ἀλλὰ κατὰ χριστομαθίαν.

A. D. <sup>107.</sup> of Epaphras (g) our cerns Burrhus my (h)  
 dear fellow servant, fellow servant, and  
 who is for you a according to God  
 faithful minister of your Deacon, blessed  
 Jesus Christ. See iv.7. in all things.

1 *Theff.* XXXVIII. 1 *Theff.* XXXVIII. *Polyc.*  
 v. 17. Pray without §. i. Be at leisure (k)  
 (i) ceasing. to pray without ceas-  
 ing.

And to the *Ephes.* §. x. he writes: pray  
 also for other men (l) without ceasing. Which  
 are the very words of St. Paul's advice.

N. T.

Ignatius.

2 *Tim.* XXXIX. 2 *Tim.* XXXIX. *Eph.* §.  
 i. 16. The Lord give ii. And Crocus —  
 mercy to the house of has in (m) all things  
 Onesiphorus, for he (n) refreshed [or com-  
 oft refreshed me, and forced] me, as the  
 was not ashamed of Father of our Lord  
 my chain: Jesus Christ shall al-  
 18. The Lord grant so refresh him."

unto

(g) Τῷ ἀγαπητῷ συνδούλῳ  
 ἡμῶν, ὃς ἐστὶ πιστὸς ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν  
 διάκονος τῷ Χριστῷ.

(i) Ἀδιαλείπτως προσεύ-  
 χεσθε.

(l) Καὶ ὑπὲρ τῶν ἄλλων δὲ ἀνθρώπων ἀδιαλείπτως προ-  
 σεύχετε.

(m) Κατὰ πάντα με ἀνέπαυσεν, ὥς καὶ αὐτὸν ὁ πατὴρ Ἰησοῦς  
 Χριστὸς ἀναψύξει.

(n) Ὅτι πολλάκις με ἀνέψυξε, καὶ τὴν ἀλυσίν με ἐκ ἐσπ-  
 χύθη.

(h) Περὶ δὲ τοῦ συνδούλου μου  
 Βέρρου, τοῦ κατὰ Θεὸν διακόνου  
 ὑμῶν ἐν παντί εὐλογημένου.

(k) Προσευχαῖς ἀόλαζε ἀ-  
 διαλείπτως.

(o) Καὶ ὑπὲρ πάντων ἀνθρώπων ἀδιαλείπτως προ-  
 σεύχετε.

(p) Κατὰ πάντα με ἀνέπαυσεν, ὥς καὶ αὐτὸν ὁ πατὴρ Ἰησοῦς  
 Χριστὸς ἀναψύξει.

(r) Ὅτι πολλάκις με ἀνέψυξε, καὶ τὴν ἀλυσίν με ἐκ ἐσπ-  
 χύθη.

Cha  
 unto  
 find n  
 in th

XI  
 No  
 warr  
 himse  
 fairs  
 be me  
 bath  
 soldier  
 XI  
 The  
 that  
 viour  
 lineffe

(o) K  
 (p)  
 ἐμπλέκ  
 παραμα  
 λογήσα  
 (r) Π  
 ἐν κατὰ

Chap. V. St. IGNATIUS.

173

unto him, that he may  
find mercy of the Lord  
in that day.

He has more to the A. D.  
same purpose, Smyrn. 107.

§. 9. 10. and says :  
“ My soul be for  
“ yours, and my  
“ bonds, which ye  
“ have not despised,  
“ nor been ashamed  
“ of.”

XL. 2 Tim. ii. 4.  
No man (p) that  
warreth, entangleth  
himself with the af-  
fairs of this life, that  
he may please him who  
hath chosen him to be a  
soldier.

XL. Polycarp. §. vi.  
Please (q) him, under  
whom ye war, and  
from whom ye receive  
your wages.

XLI. Tit. ii. 3.  
The (r) aged women,  
that they be in beha-  
viour as becometh god-  
liness.

XLI. Trall. §. iii. Titus.  
Whose (s) very be-  
haviour is an excel-  
lent instruction.  
[speaking of their  
Bishop.]

The

- (o) Καὶ τὰ δεσμά μου, ἃ ἔχ' ὑπερφανήσατε, οὐδ' ἐπησχύνθητε.  
(p) Οὐδεὶς στρατευόμενος ἐμπλέκεται ταῖς τῷ βίῳ  
πραγματείαις, ἵνα τῷ στρατο-  
λογήσαντι ἀρέσῃ.  
(r) Πρεσβυτίδας ὡσαύτως  
ἐν καταστάματι ἱεροπρεπεῖς.  
(q) Ἀρέσχετε ὡς στρατεύετε.  
(s) Οὗ αὐτὸ τὸ κατάστημα  
μεγάλῃ μαθητεῖα.



A. D.

107.

The only reason of taking notice of this place is the word καλῶσεμα, *behaviour*, which is no where in the N. T. but this place to *Titus*.

N. T.

Ignatius.

Philem.

XLII. Philem. ver.

XLII. Ephes. §. ii.

20. Yea (t) brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord.

And (u) may I always have joy of you.

This phrase of St. Paul to Philemon occurs in several (x) of Ignatius's epistles.

N. T.

Ignatius.

Hebrews.

XLIII. Heb. x.

XLIII. Ephes. §.

28. He that despised Moses law, died without mercy, under two or three witnesses. 29. Of how much sorer punishment shall he be thought worthy, who has trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified,

xvi. If therefore they who do these things according to the flesh have died, [or suffered death] how much more shall he who by wicked doctrine corrupts the faith of God, for which Jesus Christ was crucified? Such a one being defiled,

(t) Ἐγὼ σε ἐνδοξίμην ἐν κυρίῳ.

(x) Magnes. §. xii. Polycarp. §. vi.

(u) Ὁραίμην ὑμῶν διὰ πάντος.

*an unholy thing.*

shall go into fire un-  
quenchable, as shall  
he who hears him.

A. D.  
107.

XLIV. Hebr. xiii.

9. (y) *Be not carried  
about with divers and  
strange doctrines: for  
it is a good thing, that  
the heart be established  
with grace, not with  
meats, which have not  
profited them which  
have been occupied  
therein.*

XLIV. *Magnes.*

§. viii. Be (z) not  
deceived with hetero-  
dox opinions, nor  
with old fables,  
which are unprofitable.  
For if we still con-  
tinue to live accord-  
ing to the Jewish  
law, we confess, we  
have not received  
grace.

The larger or interpolated epistles of Ig-  
natiuss are in this place thus: *Be not de-  
ceived with heterodox opinions, nor give heed  
to fables and endless genealogies, [1 Tim. i. 4.]  
and to the Jewish pride. Old things are pas-  
sed away: behold, all things are become new.  
[2 Cor. v. 17.]* Whence I think it must be  
owned, that by *old fables which are unpro-  
fitable*, the author was led to think of 1  
Tim.

(y) Διδαχαῖς ποικίλαις  
ἐξέναις μὴ περιφέρειτε· καλὸν  
ὅτι χάριτι βεβαιῶνται τὴν  
καρδίαν, ἢ βρώμασιν, ἐν οἷς  
οὐκ ἐπὶ ἐλπίδι οἱ περιπατοῦ-  
ντες.

(z) Μὴ πλανᾶσθε ταῖς ἑτε-  
ροδοξίαις, μηδὲ μυθεύμασιν  
τοῖς παλαιοῖς ἀνωρελίσιν ἔσιν.  
κ. λ.

A. D. 107. Tim. i. 4. and was therefore induced to put down that place distinctly. Nevertheless, I think the whole passage of the *smaller* epistles contains a probable allusion to Heb. xiii. 9.

James. XLV. Ignatius, Ephes. §. v. For it is written: *God resisteth the proud*. Which words are indeed in James iv. 6. and 1 Pet. v. 5. But it is most probable, that Ignatius refers to Prov. iii. 34.

N. T.

Ignatius.

1 Peter.

XLVI. 1 Pet. v. 5. Yea (a) all of you be subject one to another.

XLVI. Magnes. §. xiii. Be (b) subject to the Bishop, and to one another.

1 John.

XLVII. 1 John i. 2. And the life was manifested, — and — we shew unto you that eternal life, which (c) was with the Father, and was manifested unto us.

XLVII. Magnes. §. vi. — Jesus Christ, (d) who was with the Father before the world was, and in the end appeared.

This is the doctrine of the New Testament. But the same thing being said like-

wife

(a) Πάντες δὲ ἀλλήλοις ὑποτασσόμενοι.

(c) Ὅτις ἦν πρὸς τὸν κατέρα, καὶ ἐφανερώθη ἡμῖν.

(b) Ὑποτάγντε τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ καὶ ἀλλήλοις.

(d) Ὅς πρὸ αἰώνων παρὰ πατρί ἦν, καὶ ἐν τέλει ἐφάνη.

(e) Ἐἵχομαι καὶ ὑγιαίνω  
(f) ὅτις σε ἡ  
(g) Vid. I.

wife in other texts, as *Tit.* i. 3. *1 Pet.* i. 20. *A. D.*  
 one can hardly say positively, that *Ignatius* <sup>107.</sup>  
 refers to the epistle of *John*.

N. T.

*Ignatius.*

XLVIII. 3 John

XLVIII. *Magnes.* 3 *John.*

2. Beloved, I wish §. xiii. That (f) what  
 above (e) all things ever ye do, ye may  
 that thou mayst prof- prosper in flesh and  
 per, and be in health, spirit, &c.  
 even as thy soul prof-  
 pereth.

When *Ignatius* writes *Smyrn.* §. x. "Ye  
 have well done, that ye have received *Philo*,  
 and *Reus Agathopus*, who followed me for  
 the word of God, as the servants [or Dea-  
 cons] of Christ our God:" There is a great  
 resemblance with ver. 5. 6. 7. 8. of this  
 third epistle of *John*.

XLIX. Beside these allusions and refe-  
 rences to particular books, or texts, of the  
 New Testament; it has been observed by  
 (g) some learned men, that this ancient wri-  
 ter has made mention of the scriptures of  
 the N. T. under some general names and di-  
 visions.

N

L. *Phi-*

(e) Εὐχομαι σε εὐοδῆσαι (f) Κατευοδαθῆτε σαρκὶ  
 καὶ ὑγιαίνειν, καθὼς καὶ εὐο- καὶ πνεύματι.  
 δῆται σε ἡ ψυχὴ.

(g) Vid. *Millii Prolegom.* n. 198. 199.



A. D.

107.

L. *Philadelph.* §. v. "Fleeing (*b*) to the Gospel, as the flesh of Jesus, and to the Apostles as the presbyterie of the church. Let us also love the Prophets, because that they also spoke of the Gospel, and hoped in him, [ or *Christ* ] and expected him."

In this place *Grabe*, and *Mill*, understand by *the Gospel*, the book or volume of the Gospels; by *the Apostles*, the book or volume of their epistles: as by *the Prophets*, the volume, or whole canon of the Old Testament. And (*i*) *Le Clerc*, who assents to the truth of the observation of these learned men, has farther commented upon this passage in this manner. "Which words, says he, as it seems, are to be understood of the *Evangelic*, and *Apostolic* writings. So that what *Ignatius* intends is this: that in order to understand the will of God, he fled to the Gospels, which he believed no less, than if *Christ* himself, in the flesh, that is, in the condition he was in on earth, present and still living among men, delivered with his own mouth those discourses

(*b*) Προσφυγὰν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ, ὡς σαρκὶ Ἰησοῦ, καὶ τοῖς ἀποστόλοις, ὡς πρεσβυτερίῳ ἐκκλησίας καὶ τοῖς προφήταις διὰ τὸ πᾶν. κ. λ.

(*i*) *Vid. Histon. Ec. An. D. 116. §. 25.*

" cou  
" As  
" posth  
" terie  
" Chri  
" byter  
" they  
" ficien  
" book  
" time.  
" phets.  
" amen  
" not b  
" ought  
" vation  
" the w  
" are Cl  
" second  
" cause  
" them.  
LI. A  
" the G  
" cellent  
" Christ,  
" the be

(δ) Ἐξαίρετον ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦς  
καὶ τὰς ἀγαπῶν  
ἀγγέλλον ἀπὸ

" courses which are contained in the Gospels. *A. D.*

" As also, *he fled to the writings of the A-*

" *postles*, whom he esteemed as the presby-

" *terie* of the whole *Christian* church, under

" *Christ* the universal Bishop, which [pres-

" *byterie*] taught all Christian societies what

" they ought to believe. Whence it is suf-

" ficiently manifest, how much the sacred

" books of the N. T. were esteemed at that

" time. He adds: *Let us also love the Pro-*

" *phets*. Which words intend the Old Test-

" ament, as writen: for the Prophets could

" not be otherwise known to *Ignatius*. Nor

" ought it to be passed by without obser-

" vation, that he in the first place mentions

" the writings of the N. T. by which we

" are Christians, as his *refuge*: and in the

" second place the books of the O. T. be-

" cause the *New* may be confirmed out of

" them."

LI. Again. *Philadelph.* §. ix. " But (*k*)

" the Gospel has somewhat in it more ex-

" cellent, the appearance of our Lord Jesus

" Christ, his passion and resurrection. For

" the beloved Prophets referred to him,

N 2

" but

(k) Ἐξ αἰρέτων δὲ τι ἔχει τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, τὴν παρυσίαν τῶν  
κρίσεως ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, τὸ πάθος αὐτοῦ, καὶ τὴν ἀνάστασιν· οἱ  
γὰρ ἀγαπητοὶ προφητῶν κατήγγειλαν εἰς αὐτόν· τὸ δὲ εὐ-  
αγγέλιον ἀπάρτισμά ἐστιν ἀρδασίας.

A. D. " but the Gospel is the perfection of incor-  
 107. " ruption."

LII. *Smyrn.* §. 7. " Ye (l) ought to  
 " hearken to the Prophets, but especially to  
 " the Gospel, in which the passion has been  
 " manifested to us, and the resurrection  
 " perfected,"

In these two places *Mill* supposes to be  
 meant the book of the Gospels. And in  
 the following passage by *Gospel* he supposes  
 to be meant the canon of the New Testa-  
 ment in general.

LIII. *Smyrn.* §. v. " Whom (m) neither  
 " the prophecies, nor the law of *Moses* have  
 " persuaded: nor yet the Gospel even to  
 " this day, nor the sufferings of every one  
 " of us."

LIV. *Philadelph.* §. viii. " Because (n)  
 " I have heard of some who say, unless I  
 " find it in the ancients [some are for ar-  
 " chives,]

(l) Προσέχειν δὲ τοῖς προφήταις, ἑξαίρετως δὲ τῷ εὐαγγε-  
 λίῳ, ἐν ᾧ τὸ πάθος ἡμῖν δεδήλωται, καὶ ἡ ἀνάστασις τε-  
 λείωται.

(m) Οὐκ ἐκ ἔπεισαν αἱ προφητεῖαι, ἕδ' ὁ νόμος Μωσέως,  
 ἀλλ' ἕδ' ἐμέχρι νῦν τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, ἕδ' ἐτὶ ἡμέτερα τῶν κατ'  
 ἀνδρα παθήματα.

(n) Ἐπεὶ ἠκούσα τινων λεγόντων ὅτι ἔαν μὴ ἐν τοῖς ἀρχαίοις  
 εὑρω, ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ ἢ πιστεύω καὶ λέγων[τα] μὲν αὐτοῖς, ὅτι  
 γέγραπται, ἀπεκρίθησαν μοι ὅτι πρόκειται. [al. ἢ πρόκειται.  
 vid. Voff. in loc.] ἐμοὶ δὲ ἀρχαῖά ἐστιν Ἰησοῦς Χρῆστος καὶ  
 ἀδικία ἀρχαῖα ὁ σταυρὸς αὐτοῦ, καὶ ὁ θάνατος καὶ ἡ ἀνάστασις αὐτοῦ  
 καὶ ἡ πίστις ἡ δὲ αὐτοῦ.

(o) Vid. Hist.  
 Ed. 1724.

(p) Ἐφη αὐτοῖς  
 ἡμῖν δαίμονιον ἀπο-

Chap.

" chive

" I said

" swere

" me i

" And

" are h

" rectio

This

as I coul

understo

to be the

it to be a

to believe

clearer pr

have thou

this passag

fions from

translation

LV. W

*Smyrn.* §.

" came to

" (p) said

" see that

in other wo

“ *chives*,] I do not believe in the Gospel: And *A. D.*  
 “ I said unto them, it is written; they an- <sup>107.</sup>  
 “ swered me, it is not mentioned. But to  
 “ me instead of all ancients is Jesus Christ.  
 “ And the uncorrupted ancient [doctrines]  
 “ are his cross, and his death, and his resur-  
 “ rection, and the faith which is by him.”

This difficult text I have rendered as near as I could according to the sense in which it is understood by *Le Clerc* (o), which I think to be the most likely meaning. He supposes it to be an answer to the *Jews*, who refused to believe the Gospel, for want of some clearer prophecies in the Old Testament. I have thought proper to take this notice of this passage, to prevent any wrong conclusions from it, as it stands in the Arch-Bishop's translation.

LV. We are to observe one place more. *Smyrn.* §. iii. “ And when he [*Christ*]  
 “ came to those who were with Peter, he  
 “ (p) said unto them: *Take, handle me, and*  
 “ *see that I am not an incorporeal demon.*” Or  
 in other words, I am not a spirit.

N 3

*Eusebe*

(o) *Vid. Hist. E. 116. 26. et ad loc. Ignat. ap. Patr. A. Ed. 1724.*

(p) Ἐφη αὐτοῖς· λάβετε, ἡλλαφῆστέ με, καὶ ἴδετε, ὅτι ἐγὼ οὐκ εἰμι δαιμόνιον ἀσώματον.



A. D.  
107.

*Eusebe* (q) has quoted this passage of *Ignatius*, and says, he did not know whence *Ignatius* took these words of our Saviour. But *Jerome* (r) says, it was taken out of the *Gospel according to the Hebrews*. If these ancient writers, and some learned moderns, had not suspected these words to be taken out of some particular writing; I think one might have supposed, that *Ignatius* only quoted *Luke's Gospel* in a loose manner, where is exactly the same sense. Ch. xxiv. 39. *Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself. Handle me and see, for a spirit has not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.* And if it had not been a disputed point, I should have inserted this passage above, as a quotation of the Gospel of St. *Luke*, or a reference to it. I find Mr. *Le Clerc* so much of the same mind, that I shall place his words (s) in

(q) *H. E. L. 3. c. 36. p. 108. A.*

(r) *De Vir. Ill. n. 16. in Ignatio. Vid. et Grabe spicil. T. i. p. 25.*

(s) Quae crediderim quidem *Hieronymo* fuisse in evangelio *Hebraeorum*; sed videntur esse paraphrasis verborum, quae sunt *Lucae*, cap. xxiv. 39. quâ uti potuit *Ignatius*, pro more antiquissimorum patrum, qui persaepe scripturae sensum potius quam verba laudant. Certè *Ignatius* ea verba *Matthaeo* non tribuit, et *Nazaræi* etiam historiam, quae apud *Lucam* exstabat, potuerunt suo exemplari *Matthaei* nonnihil immutatam inferere; ita ut utrique ex eodem fonte hauserint, non *Ignatius* ex *Nazaræis*. *Dissertar. iii. quae est de iv. Evangelijis*; ad calcem *Harmoniae Evangelicae*.

in the  
it was t  
Bishop  
these w  
brews,  
ed in it.

Havin

ed men,  
little lon  
sage wi  
oppositio  
' Christ  
' raised  
' say, th  
' themse  
' as they  
' to be i  
' origina

(t) *Quin*  
*natum* illa  
non scriptar  
orum *Evang*  
*Exerc. ad*  
this passage  
milis videt  
terwards: C  
qui cum Ap  
eo tempore,  
eandem hist  
Ibid.

(u) *Kai x*  
*ματρες x; d*

in the margin. And I would also add, that <sup>A. D.</sup> it was the opinion of (t) *Isaac Casaubon*, and <sup>107.</sup> *Bishop Pearson*, that *Ignatius* did not quote these words out of the Gospel of the Hebrews, but that they were afterwards inserted in it.

Having shewn the opinion of these learned men, I beg leave to detain the reader a little longer, while I set before him this passage with the context more at large. In opposition to some heretics *Ignatius* says: 'Christ truly suffered, as he also truly 'raised up himself: not as some unbelievers 'say, that he only seemed to suffer, they 'themselves only seeming to be. And (u) 'as they think, so shall it happen to them, 'to be incorporeal and phantastical. [in the 'original, literally, *incorporeal and demoniac.*]

N 4

' But

(t) Quin est fortasse verius, non ex Evangelio Hebraico *Ignatium* illa verba descripsisse, verum traditionem allegasse, non scriptam, quae postea in literas fuerit relata, et *Hebraeorum Evangelio* quod *Matthaeo* tribuebant inserta. *Casaub.* Exerc. ad *Baron.* xvi. Num. 126. *Pearson* having cited this passage approves it; Et hoc quidem multo mihi verisimilius videtur. *Vindic. Ign.* P. 2. Cap. 9. And again afterwards: Quidni pariter et *S. Ignatius*, [inquit *Pearsonus*] qui cum Apostolis et eorum discipulis versatus est, praesertim eo tempore, quo scriptis Evangeliiis uti forte eo non licebat, eandem historiam quam narrat *S. Lucas* aliis verbis explicaret? *Ibid.*

(u) Καὶ καθὼς φρονοῦσιν, καὶ συμβήσεται αὐτοῖς, οὕτως ἀσωμάτους καὶ δαιμονικοῖς.

A. D. <sup>107.</sup> ' But I know, that after the resurrection he  
 ' was in the flesh, and I believe him to be so  
 ' still. And when he came to those who  
 ' were with Peter, he said to them: *Take,*  
 ' *handle me, and see that I am not an incor-*  
 ' *poreal phantom.*' From whence I think it  
 appears, *Ignatius* was wont to use the words  
*demon* and *demoniac*, as equivalent to *phantom*  
 or spirit, and *phantastical*. This being his stile,  
 if he had not *St. Luke* before him, (as it is  
 very likely, in his circumstances, he had not;)   
 it was very natural for him to represent the  
 sense of that text of *St. Luke's Gospel*, just  
 as we see in this passage.

I shall now make two observations:

1. That this is the first place of the *Apo-*  
*stolical Fathers*, in which we have a passage,  
 I do not say quoted from, but found in, an  
 apocryphal book of the New Testament.  
 And this is the first in *Grabe's* collection of  
 the fragments of the *Gospel* according to the  
*Hebrews*. It will not be improper for me  
 to confirm this observation by the judgement  
 of *Mr. Le Clerc*, who has been so conversant  
 with these writers. He says then (x) expres-

ly,  
 (x) Non animadverti ulla uspiam Evangelia, aut scripta  
 Apocrypha ad historiam aut doctrinam Christi pertinentia, ab  
 iis laudari; excepto uno illo *Ignatii*, in quo videri possit lau-  
 dare Evangelium *Nazaræorum*; sed quem ex *Luca* expressum  
 potius existimaverim, ut jam dixi. *Ibid.* p. 542, b.

Chap  
 ly,  
 ' *Apo*  
 ' her  
 ' nex  
 ' bo  
 ' of C  
 ' *Ign*  
 ' the  
 ' thin  
 ' *Luke*  
 2. I  
 accordi  
 of it af  
 posed a  
 appears  
 only wi  
 perhaps  
 think  
 some o  
*Hebrew*  
 tunity o  
 ground-  
 Gospel;  
 of thing  
 haps oth  
 had been  
 LVI.  
 testimoni

ly, ' that he has not observed in any of the *A. D.*  
 ' *Apostolical* Fathers (he means those already *107.*  
 ' here quoted, and St. *Polycarp*, who will  
 ' next follow :) any quotations of apocryphal  
 ' books, concerning the doctrine or historie  
 ' of Christ, except only this one passage of  
 ' *Ignatius*: In which he may seem to quote  
 ' the Gospel of the *Nazarenes*, but I rather  
 ' think, says he, the place taken from St.  
 ' *Luke*.'

2. I would observe concerning the Gospel according to the *Hebrews*, That this passage of it affords an argument, that it was composed after our genuine Gospels; because it appears to be taken out of St. *Luke*'s Gospel, only with a little alteration; in conformity perhaps to this very place of *Ignatius*. I think I could argue the same thing from some other passages of that Gospel of the *Hebrews*. But we may have a better opportunity of shewing more at large, that the ground-work of that Gospel is St. *Matthew*'s Gospel; to which have been made additions of things taken out of St. *Luke*'s, (and perhaps other Gospels) and other matters, that had been delivered by oral tradition.

LVI. Thus I have given an account of the testimonie, which *Ignatius* affords to the books of



A. D.

107.

of the New Testament, without any respect to the larger epistles, except in numb. xlv. where I have particularly mentioned them. The larger epistles would have supplied me with many more, and express quotations of the Gospels and Epistles, if we could allow them to be genuine. But beside the many other arguments against their genuineness, this may be one, that there are more quotations out of the Old and New Testament, than could be well expected. The larger epistles were plainly composed by a man at leisure. *Ignatius* at his writing was very much straitened for time, being at once a traveller, and a prisoner under a strong guard; and at the places where he rested much engaged by the kind and respectful visits of the Christians there, and from the neighboring cities, and in giving them exhortations by word of mouth. I have endeavored to take nothing, but what is genuine. The *Greek* edition, even of the *smaller* epistle to the *Romans*, as now published by *Ruinart*, would have afforded me two references or quotations more than I have taken; one of *Matthew* xvi. 26. the other of *2 Cor.* iv. 8. the words of which texts are there at length. But *Grabe* (y) has honest-

(y) Neque tamen dissimulare possum, et istud non omnino  
sincerum,

sincerum, f  
que, addita  
*Patr. T. 2.*

Cha  
ly and  
to be  
ancien

LV  
monie

he has

*Ephefi*

here a

*Matth*

luded

ful, un

passage

here ta

of the

and sec

*Ephefi*

*Thessalo*

*Philemo*

first and

these al

manifes

those to

*brews.*

greemen

other bo

# Chap. V. St. IGNATIUS.

187

ly and ingenuously owned, he suspects them *A. D.*  
to be additions, they being wanting in the <sup>107.</sup>  
ancient *Latin* version of that epistle.

LVII. We may now sum up the testi- *The sum of*  
monie of *Ignatius*. And in the first place, *his testi-*  
he has expressly ascribed the epistle to the *monie.*  
*Epheſians* to *St. Paul*. In the next place,  
here are plain alluſions to the Gospels of *St.*  
*Matthew* and *St. John*. Whether he has al-  
luded to the Gospel of *St. Luke*, is doubt-  
ful, unleſs we allow him to refer to it in the  
paſſage at numb. lv. The other alluſions  
here taken from *Ignatius* relate to the *Acts*  
of the *Apoſtles*, the epistle to *Romans*, firſt  
and ſecond to the *Corinthians*, *Galatians*,  
*Epheſians*, *Philippians*, *Coloſſians*, firſt to the  
*Theſſalonians*, ſecond to *Timothie*, to *Titus*,  
*Philemon*, *Hebrews*, firſt epistle of *Peter*,  
firſt and third epistles of *John*. And moſt of  
theſe alluſions, I apprehend, will be allowed  
maniſeſt. The leſt conſiderable ſeem to be  
theſe to the *Coloſſians*, *Titus*, and the *He-*  
*brews*. And if any think likewise, the a-  
greement between *Ignatius* and ſome of the  
other books not material, I ſhall not contend  
about

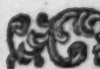
sincerum, ſed loca ſcripturae, 2 *Cor.* iv. et *Matth.* xvi. alia-  
que, addita videri, quae a vetere verſione abſunt. *Grabe ſpicil.*  
*Patr. T. 2. p. 8.*

*A. D.* about it. Every one is now able to judge  
 107. for himself. But I think, there are some references to the greatest part of these books, which will not be disputed.

And besides, here are terms used by him, importing a collection of the Gospels, and of the Epistles of the Apostles, and of the books of the New Testament in general.



C H A P.



T  
 epistle  
 some  
 in Gau  
 shew a  
 quently  
 and the  
 shall co  
 Iren  
 gainst a  
 ' the sa  
 ' by th  
 ' many  
 ' by th  
 ' churc  
 ' saw i  
 ' and a

(a) L.  
 L. iv. cap



## C H A P. VI.

### St. POLYCARP.

#### *His Historie.*

**T**HE character and age of *Polycarp*, <sup>A. D. 108.</sup> and the genuinenesse of his remaining epistle to the *Philippians*, will appear from some passages of *Irenaeus*, Bishop of *Lyons* in *Gaul*. These passages will also serve to shew at the same time the age, and consequently the authority of *Irenaeus* himself, and the value of his testimonie, when we shall come to make use of it.

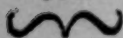
*Irenaeus* (a) says in his excellent work against all heresies: “ And *Polycarp* teaches  
‘ the same things, who was not only taught  
‘ by the Apostles, and had conversed with  
‘ many who had seen Christ, but was also  
‘ by the Apostles appointed Bishop of the  
‘ church of *Smyrna* in *Asia*. Whom also I  
‘ saw in my early age: (for he lived long,  
‘ and at a great age suffered a glorious and  
‘ splendid

(a) *L. 3. c. 3. §. 4. Edit. Mass. et apud Euseb. H. E. L. iv. cap. 14.*



A. D.

108.



‘ splendid martyrdom :) I say *Polycarp* alwaies  
 ‘ taught these things, which he had learned  
 ‘ from the Apostles, which he delivered to  
 ‘ the church, and which alone are true. To  
 ‘ this bear witnesse all the churches in *Asia*,  
 ‘ and they who to this time have succeeded  
 ‘ *Polycarp*; that he is a more credible and  
 ‘ sure witnesse of the truth than *Valentinus*  
 ‘ and *Marcion*, and other authors of corrupt  
 ‘ opinions. Who also when he came to  
 ‘ *Rome* in (A) the time of *Anicetus* con-  
 ‘ verted many of the before-mentioned he-  
 ‘ retics to the church of God, declaring that  
 ‘ to be the one and only truth which had been  
 ‘ received from the Apostles, and was deli-  
 ‘ vered by the church. And there (B) are  
 ‘ those

(A) The occasion of *Polycarp*'s journey to *Rome* is said to be some controversie about the time of keeping *Easter*. See *Euseb. H. E. L. iv. c. 14.* *Hieron. de Vir. Ill. c. 17.* But learned men are not agreed about the time of it. It must be determined by that of *Anicetus* being Bishop of *Rome*. Bishop *Pearson*, as he places the Bishoprick of *Anicetus* in the begining of the reign of *Antonine* the Pious, places this journey accordingly about the year 142. *Oper. Post. Diff. ii. c. 14.* Others in 153. *Basnage Ann. 153. §. 64.* Others in 158. or 160. See *Pagi. Crit. 165. n. v.* *Du Pin Bibl. Polycarpe.*

(B) The same storie is told with different circumstances by *Epiphanius H. 30. c. 24.* But the truth of it has been sometimes called in question. It is observable, that *Irenaeus*, though personally acquainted with *Polycarp*, does not say, that he had it himself from him: but that *there were some, who heard him say as much: καὶ εἰσὶν οἱ ἀκηκόοντες αὐτοῦ.* It is not at all likely, that

Cha

‘ the  
 ‘ the  
 ‘ *Ep*  
 ‘ bat  
 ‘ ing  
 ‘ *Let*  
 ‘ *whi*  
 ‘ *with*  
 ‘ once  
 ‘ him  
 ‘ you  
 ‘ The  
 ‘ *Poly*  
 ‘ whic  
 ‘ cerne  
 ‘ both  
 ‘ doctri

that the A  
 nius, or v  
 this impro  
 by the *Spin*  
 τοσ προσλθ  
 John *even*  
 labor und  
 βαλανείω.  
 ret say, it  
 was in the  
 in the rela  
 this whole  
*Vit. Joa*  
 fer. And  
 of it only a  
 fore quoted  
 λισις λωόμε

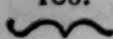
' those who have heard him say, that *John*,  
 ' the disciple of the Lord, going to bathe at  
 ' *Ephesus*, and seeing *Cerintus* already in the  
 ' bath, came out again in haste without bath-  
 ' ing, saying to those who were with him :  
 ' *Let us flee hence, lest the bath should fall,*  
 ' *while Cerintus the enemy of the truth is*  
 ' *within.* And *Polycarp* himself, *Marcion*  
 ' once coming in his way, and saying to  
 ' him, *Do you own me?* he answered : *I own*  
 ' *you to be the first born of Satan.* . . . .  
 ' There is also a most excellent epistle of  
 ' *Polycarp* written to the *Philippians* : from  
 ' which they who are willing and are con-  
 ' cerned for their own salvation, may learn  
 ' both the character of his faith, and the  
 ' doctrine of the truth.'

This

that the Apostle *John* should go to a public bath. *Epipha-*  
*nus*, or whoever formed the storie, as related by him, saw  
 this impropriety : and therefore, says, that *John* was moved  
 by the Spirit to go thither. Ηναγκάσθη ὑπὸ τοῦ ἁγίου πνεύμα-  
 τος προελθεῖν εἰς τὴν βαλάνειον. And *Theodoret* says, that  
*John* went thither, because of an indisposition he happened to  
 labor under : συνέβη γὰρ καὶ αὐτὸν δι' ἀρρώστιαν χρῆσθαι τῇ  
 βαλάνειῳ. *Theod. H. F. l. 2. c. 3.* *Irenaeus* and *Theodo-*  
*ret* say, it was *Cerintus* : *Epiphanius*, that it was *Ebion*, who  
 was in the bath. And there are other different circumstances  
 in the relations of this matter, and also other objections against  
 this whole storie, which may be seen in *Lampe Prolegom. de*  
*Vit. Joann. Evang. lib. 1. cap. v. n. 1. 2.* to whom I re-  
 fer. And indeed, some of the ancients who mention it, speak  
 of it only as an uncertain report, particularly *Theodoret*, be-  
 fore quoted. Τῆτον, ὡς φασιν, ὁ θεσπέσιος ἰωάννης ὁ εὐαγγε-  
 λιστὴς λυόμενον θεασάμενος κ. λ. ubi supra.

A. D.

108.



This passage has been transcribed by *Eusebe* in his Ecclesiastical (*b*) Historie, who immediately adds: “*Polycarp* in the forementioned epistle to the *Philippians*, which is still extant, has made use of some testimonies from the first epistle of *Peter*.”

*Irenaeus* also in a (*c*) letter to *Florinus*, who had embraced the errors of *Valentinus*, has these words: “Those opinions, the Presbyters before us, who also conversed with the Apostles, have not delivered to you. For I saw you, when I was very young, in the lower *Asia* with *Polycarp*.... For I better remember the affairs of that time, than those which have lately happened: the things which we learn in our childhood growing up with the soul, and uniting themselves to it. Infomuch that I can tell the place in which the Blessed *Polycarp* sat and taught, and his going out and coming in: and the manner of his life, and the form of his person: and the discourses he made to the people, and how he related his conversation with *John*, and others who had seen the Lord; and how he

(*b*) *L. iv. cap. 14.*

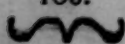
(*c*) The letter itself is not extant. But *Eusebe* has preserved a fragment of it. *L. v. c. 20.*

Chap  
' he  
' hea  
' bot  
' trin  
' eye  
' whi  
' scrip  
' the  
' hear  
' on  
' thro  
' new  
' can  
' this  
' heard  
' ont,  
' his cu  
' to wh  
' should  
' have f  
' fitting  
' words  
' from  
' boring  
' some c  
' monish  
We ha  
age and c

' he related their sayings, and what he had *A. D.*  
 ' heard from them concerning the Lord; *108.*  
 ' both concerning his miracles, and his doc-  
 ' trine, as he had received them from the  
 ' eye-witnesses of the word of life: all  
 ' which *Polycarp* related agreeable to the  
 ' scriptures. These things I then, through  
 ' the mercy of God toward me, diligently  
 ' heard and attended to, recording them not  
 ' on paper, but upon my heart. And  
 ' through the grace of God I continually re-  
 ' new the remembrance of them. And I  
 ' can affirm in the presence of God, that if  
 ' this blessed and apostolical Presbyter had  
 ' heard any such thing, he would have cried  
 ' out, and stopped his ears, and according to  
 ' his custom, would have said: *Good God,*  
 ' *to what times hast thou reserved me, that I*  
 ' *should bear such things!* And he would  
 ' have fled from the place, in which he was  
 ' sitting or standing, when he heard such  
 ' words. And, as much may be perceived  
 ' from his epistles, which he sent to neigh-  
 ' boring churches, establishing them: or to  
 ' some of the brethren, instructing and ad-  
 ' monishing them."

We have now seen in *Irenaeus Polycarp's*  
 age and character, particular mention of his  
 O letters



A. D.  
108.

letters to the *Philippians*, and other churches, and to some of the brethren, or particular persons.

*Eusebe* speaking of those who flourished in the time of *Trajan*, as *Ignatius*, and *Papias*, (*d*) says: "At that time flourished in *Asia* " *Polycarp*, disciple of the Apostles, who " received the Bishoprick of the church in " *Smyrna* from the eye-witnesses and mini- " sters of the Lord."

*St. Jerome* in his book (*e*) of *Illustrious Men* says: " *Polycarp* the disciple of *John* " the Apostle, and by him ordained Bishop " of *Smyrna*, was the prince of all *Asia*. " Forasmuch as he had seen and been taught " by some of the Apostles, and those who " had seen the Lord. . . . . Afterwards " in the reign of *Marc Antonine* and *L. Au-* " *relius Commodus*, in the fourth persecution " after *Nero*, he was condemned to the " flames at *Smyrna*, the Proconsul being " present, and all the people in the amphi- " theatre demanding his death. He wrote " to the *Philippians* a very useful epistle, " which to this day is read in the assemblie " of *Asia*."

His

(*d*) *H. E. l. 3. c. 36.*(*e*) *Cap. 13.*

Cha

Hi

Bisho

ed u

148.

many

therea

Anton

nage (

(b) An

ter op

truth t

and J

tonine :

of this

Pagi h

So I

add, th

which

for the

dom.

We

in a lett

church

In this

(f) Op.

(g) Ann.

(b) Vid.

(i) Criti

(k) See C

His martyrdom happened, according to *A. D.*  
 Bishop (f) *Pearson*, who supposes he suffered  
 under *Antonine* the Pious, in the year  
 148. according to *Du Pin*, *Tillemont*, and  
 many other learned men, in the year 167, or  
 thereabouts, in the seventh year of *Marc*  
*Antonine* the Philosopher: according to *Baf-*  
*nage* (g) in the year 169, which was also  
 (h) Arch-Bishop *Usher*'s opinion. These la-  
 ter opinions seem to me much nearer the  
 truth than Bishop *Pearson*'s, because *Eusebe*  
 and *Jerome* place it in the time of *Marc An-*  
*tonine*: though to determine the exact year  
 of this martyrdom is very difficult, as (i)  
*Pagi* has observed.

So I said in the first edition. I must now  
 add, that (k) there is an ancient Inscription,  
 which very much favors *Pearson*'s argument  
 for the early date of St. *Polycarp*'s martyr-  
 dom.

We have the Relation of his martyrdom  
 in a letter of the church of *Smyrna* to the  
 church of *Philadelphia* and other churches.  
 In this Relation *Polycarp* says to the Pro-  
 consul:

(f) *Op. Post. Diff. ii. c. 15. 16. 17.*

(g) *Ann. 169. §. vi. et seq.*

(h) *Vid. Not. ad cap. xi. ep. Polyc. ad Philip.*

(i) *Critic. in Bar. 167. §. 4. 5.*

(k) *See Chishull's Travels, pag. 11.*

*A. D.* <sup>108.</sup> *consul: Eighty and six years have I now served Christ.* Understand this of his life; and according to every calculation of the time of his death, he lived a good while in the first centurie. Understand it of his Christianity, as (l) *Tillemont* does, and being martyred, as he says, in the year 166, his conversion to Christianity happened in the year 80. Understand it of his serving Christ in the ministrie: and he was Bishop of *Smyrna* from the year 84, according (m) to *Basnage*. He is thought by many to be the angel of the church of *Smyrna*, to whom the epistle in the *Revelation* is sent.

But though we should not be able precisely to settle the time of *Polycarp's* birth, or death; it is evident from the testimonies here alleged, that he was a disciple of *John*; appointed Bishop of *Smyrna* by him, if not also by some other Apostles joining with him therein: and that he had conversed with several, who had seen the Lord.

*Irenæus* assures us, *Polycarp* had writ divers letters. The losse of the writings of such a person cannot but be lamented. And I think it somewhat likely, that *Eusebe* and *Jerome*

(l) *Mem. E. T. 2. Part. 2. Polycarp Art. 1.*

(m) *Annal. 84. §. 3. 169. §. 12.*

Cha

had

the F

Th

mong

this ep

been c

it, as

tions.

answer

carp h

given c

servatio

quoted

second.

quoted

therefor

withou

It is

death o

posed,

nies, th

shall pla

death of

The

we have

eleventh

(n) *H. 1*

(o) *Anna*

Chap. VI. St. POLYCARP.

197

had seen nothing of his, beside the epistle to the *Philippians*. A. D.  
108.

There is scarce any doubt or question among learned men about the genuineness of this epistle of *Polycarp*, though there have been exceptions taken to a passage or two of it, as if they were additions and interpolations. Indeed the epistle we still have well answers to the apostolical character of *Polycarp* himself: and agrees with the character given of his epistle by *Irenaeus*, and the observation of *Eusebe*: that he had therein quoted the first epistle of *Peter*, and not the second. It has also the passages expressly quoted from it (n) by *Eusebe*. It ought therefore to be received, and respected as his, without hesitation.

It is certain, this epistle was writ after the death of *Ignatius*, and, as is generally supposed, soon after it. *Basnage* (o) indeed denies, there is any proof of this. However I shall place it here in the year next after the death of *Ignatius*, A. D. 108.

The former and larger part of this epistle we have in it's original *Greek*. The tenth, eleventh, and twelfth sections, (of which

O 3

there

(n) *H. E. L.* 3. c. 36. p. 108.

(o) *Annal.* 110. §. 4. 6.



A. D. 108. there are thirteen in the whole) are now extant only in an ancient *Latin* Version: which is entire, and contains the whole epistle.

*The Relation of the martyrdom of Polycarp*, writ by the church of *Smyrna*, of which he was Bishop, is an excellent piece: which may be read with pleasure by the *English* reader in the Arch-Bishop of *Canterburie's* collection of the Apostolical Fathers. As there are in it some quotations of the books of the N. T. or references to them; I shall give an account of it, when I have made my collections out of *Polycarp's* epistle to the *Philippians*. The greatest part of that *Relation* is inserted by *Eusebe* in his Ecclesiastical (p) Historie. And it (q) is preserved elsewhere entire.

There are likewise some *Fragments*, called *Responsiones*, ascribed to St. *Polycarp*: in which the four Evangelists, and the characters of their Gospels, are distinctly mentioned. These fragments were first published by *Feuardentius* in his *Irenaeus* from *Victor* of *Capua*, a writer of the sixth century, and have been since several times republished

(p) *L. iv. c. 15.*

(q) *Apud Patr. Apost. Cotel. v. ii. Ruinart AÆ. Martyr. et alibi.*

Chap  
lished  
observe  
there  
in the t  
epistle t  
plainly,  
think,  
our Mo  
observe  
*Victor*  
from t  
upon o  
little ca  
works  
any lon  
sages t  
are litt  
conclud  
restrain  
to those  
as belong  
thor. T  
notice c

(r) *Ap.*  
p. 203.  
(s) Il y  
posées. Bi  
(t) Disc  
Ch. 3. §.

lished by (r) others. But we have already A. D.  
108. observed it to be somewhat likely, that there was nothing remaining of *Polycarp* in the time of *Eusebe* and *Jerome*, beside his epistle to the *Philippians*. *Du Pin* (s) says plainly, there is a good deal of reason to think, these fragments are *suppositious*. And our Most Reverend Metropolitan (t) having observed, that beside the great distance of *Victor Capuanus*, the first collector of them, from the time of *Polycarp*, he has given, upon other occasions, manifest proofs of his little care and judgement in distinguishing the works of the ancient Fathers, who lived any long time before him: and that the passages themselves, ascribed to St. *Polycarp*, are little agreeable to the *Apostolical* age, concludes: *All these considerations have justly restrained learned men from giving any credit to those Fragments, or from receiving them as belonging in any wise to so ancient an author. They will therefore be no farther taken notice of here. I proceed to consider the*

O 4

testi-

(r) *Ap. Grabe Irenae. p. 205. et Patres Apost. T. 2. p. 203.*

(s) Il y a bien de l'apparence, que ce sont de choses supposées. *Bibl. Eccl. en Polycarpe.*

(t) Discourse concerning the treatises of his Collection. Ch. 3. §. 14.

A. D. testimonies of the only remaining piece of this  
 108. Father.

In St. Polycarp's short epistle to the *Philippians* are many texts of the N. T. though but few books cited, or expressly named. However of these in the first place.

*Books of the N. T. quoted by Polycarp.*

N. T.

Polycarp.

1 Corinth.

I. 1 Cor. vi. 2. Do

ye not know, that the saints shall judge the world?

I. Ch. xi. Do (u)

we not know, that the saints shall judge the world? as Paul teaches.

Ephes.

II. Eph. iv. 26.

Be ye (x) angrie, and sin not: let not the sun go do down upon your wrath.

II. Ch. xli. For I

trust that ye are well exercised in the holy scriptures . . . . . As in these scriptures it is (y) said: Be ye angrie, and sin not. And, let not the sun go down upon your wrath.

It

(u) An nescimus, quia sancti mundum judicabunt? sicut Paulus docet.

(x) Ὁργίζεσθε, καὶ μὴ ἁμαρτάνετε· ὃ ἡλίου μὴ ἐπιδύετω ἐπὶ τῷ παροργισμῷ ὑμῶν.

(y) Ut his scripturis dictum est: Irascimini, et nolite peccare. Et, Sol non occidat super iracundiam vestram.

(z) Ὁς  
 76, κ. λ.  
 (a) In q  
 epistolae ej  
 suis, quae I

It is true, the first of these directions is the same with that *Pf. iv. 4. Stand in awe, and sin not.* Which in the *Septuagint* version is: Ὁργίζεσθε, καὶ μὴ ἀμαρτάνετε, *Be angrie, and sin not.* But as the later advice is nowhere in the O. T. and both these precepts are together in the epistle to the *Ephesians*; it seems to me, that *Polycarp* does expressly refer the *Philippians* to St. Paul's epistle to the *Ephesians*, and calls it *scripture*. If this be so, then we see, that the writings of the N. T. had now the name of *Sacred Writings*, or *Holy Scriptures*, and that they were much read by Christians in general.

III. Ch. iii. "For neither I, nor any one like me, can come up to the wisdom of the blessed and renowned *Paul*, who . . . when absent (x) wrote to you letters: [an epistle, A. B. *Wake*] into which if ye look, you will be able to edify yourselves in the faith which has been delivered to you."

*Philip.*  
1 and 2  
*Theff.*

Ch. xi. "But I have neither perceived nor heard any such thing to be in you, among (a) whom the blessed *Paul* labored, who  
are

(x) Ὅς καὶ ἀπὸν ὑμῶν ἐγραφεν ἐπιστολάς, εἰς αἷς ἐὰν ἐγκύψῃ-  
τε, κ. λ.

(a) In quibus laboravit beatus Paulus; qui estis in principio epistolae ejus. De vobis etenim gloriatur in omnibus ecclesiis, quae Deum tunc solae cognoverunt.



*A. D.* are in the begining of his epistle: For *he glories in you, in all the churches*, which then alone knew God.”

In the former of these two passages the original *Greek* word, which I have rendered *letters*, is in the plural number. But thereby some understand only an epistle, and so it is rendered by the Arch-Bishop in his excellent translation. And it is (*b*) certain, that the original word is sometimes used in the plural number for only *one* epistle. Understand it so here, and we have at least an exprefs testimonie for the epistle of *Paul* to the *Philippians*. But comparing these two passages together, I am (*c*) apt to think, that by *epistles Polycarp* intends the epistle to the *Philippians*, and also both the epistles to the *Thessalonians*. For in this last passage he seems to quote these words, 2 *Thess.* i. 4. *So that we ourselves glory in you in the churches of God.* Nor is it at all unlikely, that *Polycarp* might consider the epistles directly sent to the *Thessalonians*, as written likewise to the *Philippians*; they being also in the same province of *Macedonia*, of which *Thessalonica* was the capital city.

And

(*b*) *Vid. Coteler. in loc.*

(*c*) This was the opinion of *Salmeron*. *Vid. Uffer. notas* ad h. l.

(*d*) *Mmpe*

And though the word in the first passage should be limited to one epistle, that directed to the *Philippians*; yet this later passage is so clear for the second to the *Thessalonians*, that we are in a manner obliged to understand *Polycarp* to suppose the *Philippians* concerned in those epistles.

*Words of the N. T. and Allusions, without the name of the book or writer.*

N. T.

*Polycarp.*

IV. Matth. v. 3.

*Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. v. 7. Blessed are the merciful, for they shall obtain mercy. 10. Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness sake, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.*

Matth. vii. 1.

*Judge not, that ye be not judged. 2. And with what measure*

IV. Ch. ii. But (d)

*Matthew and Luke.*

*remembring what the Lord said teaching: Judge not, that ye be not judged: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: be ye merciful, that ye may obtain mercy: with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. And, blessed are the poor, and they that are persecuted for righteousness sake ye*

(d) Μνημονεύοντες δὲ τὸν εἶπεν ὁ Κύριος διδάσκων. κ. λ.

A. D. <sup>108.</sup> ye mete, it shall be sate: for theirs is the kingdom of God.

measured to you again.  
Luke vi. 20. Blessed be ye poor, for yours is the kingdom of God.

36. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful.

37. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged.

. . . . Forgive, and ye shall be forgiven.

38. . . . For with the same measure that ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

V. Matth. v. 44. Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you.

VI. Matth. vi. 12. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. 14. For

V. Ch. xii. And pray for those that persecute you, and hate you, and for the enemies of the crosse.

VI. Ch. vi. Not severe in judgement, knowing that we are all debtors in point

if

Cha

if ye  
trespa  
venly

forgiv

if ye

VI

And

tempta

VI

41. T

deed

the fle

also M

I H

ginal

of the

be co

ment

too te

some f

there

(e) Ka

is περιπα

(g) T

μωρ, η δ

if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. 15. But if ye forgive not, &c.

of sin: If therefore we pray the Lord, that he will forgive us, we ought also to forgive.

A. D.  
108.

VII. Matth. vi. 13. And lead us not into temptation (e).

VII. Ch. vii. With supplication beseeching the all-seeing God (f), not to lead us into temptation.

VIII. Matth. xxvi. 41. The (g) spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak. See also Mark xiv. 38.

VIII. Ch. vii. As the Lord (h) hath said: The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

I have put down in the margin the original words of these two last passages, and of the corresponding texts in *Matthew*, to be compared as a specimen of the agreement between the originals. It would be too tedious to do so all along, without some special reason. But in the other places there is also a like agreement in the originals

(e) Καὶ μὴ εἰσενέσῃς ἡμᾶς εἰς πειρασμόν.

(g) Τὸ μὲν πνεῦμα πρόθυμον, ἡ δὲ σὰρξ ἀδυνάμει.

(f) Μὴ εἰσενέσῃς ἡμᾶς εἰς πειρασμόν.

(h) Κεθαὶς εἶπεν ὁ Κύριος· τὸ μὲν πνεῦμα πρόθυμον, ἡ δὲ σὰρξ ἀδυνάμει.



*A. D.* 108. ginals with what appears in the translations.

We have in divers of these passages words of our Lord, with a mark of reference, *The Lord hath said*, though no Historian or Evangelist is expressly named.

N. T.

*Polycarp.*

*Acts.*

IX. Acts ii. 24. *Whom (i) God hath raised up, having loosed the pains of death.*

IX. Ch. i. *Whom (k) God hath raised, having loosed the pains of hell.*

*Romans.*

X. Rom. xii. 9.—*And if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self. 10. Love worketh no ill to his neighbour, therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.*

X. Ch. iii. Led on by love toward God, and Christ, and toward our neighbour: For if any man has these things, he has fulfilled the law of righteousness: For he that has love is far from all sin.

XI. Rom. xiv. 10. *We (l) shall all stand*

XI. Ch. vi. *And (m) must all stand before*

(i) Ὁς ὁ Θεὸς ἀνέστη, λύσαι τὰς ὀδύνας τῆ θανάτου.

(l) Πάντες γὰρ πρακτισόμεθα τῷ βήματι τοῦ Χριστοῦ. Ἀλλ' ἐν ἑκάστῳ ἡμῶν περὶ ἑαυτοῦ λόγον δώσει Θεός.

(k) Ὁν ἔγειρεν ὁ Θεός, λύσαι τὰς ὀδύνας τῆ αἰῶνος.

(m) Καὶ πάντας δεῖ παραστῆναι τῷ βήματι τοῦ Χριστοῦ. ἢ ἕκαστον ὑπὲρ ἑαυτοῦ λόγον δώσει.

before  
seat  
So th  
us sh  
count  
God.

In  
and fo  
compa  
this is  
to part

But no  
ten un  
keep co  
man th  
brother  
tor, or  
an idolat  
such a o  
eat.

Neither  
nor idolat  
dulyers,  
ate, nor  
hemselves

before the judgement-seat of Christ. 12. of Christ, and every one give an account for himself. *A. D. 108.*

In 2 Cor. v. 10. is much the same sense, and some of the same words. But he who compares the places together will perceive, this is the place, which, Polycarp had an eye to particularly.

N. T.

Polycarp.

XII. 1 Cor. v. 11. But now I have written unto you, not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater . . . . with such a one, no not to eat.

XII. Ch. xi. If any one does not keep himself from covetousnesse, he shall be polluted with idolatrie, and shall be judged, as if he were a Gentil.

XIII. 1 Cor. vi. 9. Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with man-

XIII. Ch. v. And neither fornicators, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, shall inherit the kingdom of God. kind,

A. D. kind, 10. . . . shall  
 108. inherit the kingdom of  
 God.

2 Cor.

XIV. 2 Cor. iv. 5.  
 Knowing (n) that he  
 which raised up the  
 Lord Jesus, shall  
 raise up us also by  
 Jesus.

XV. 2 Cor. vi. 7.  
 —by the armour of  
 righteousness.

XVI. 2 Cor. viii.  
 21. Providing (p)  
 for honest things, not  
 only in the fight of the  
 Lord, but in the fight  
 of men.

Part of this advice is given also Rom. xii.  
 17. Provide things honest in the fight of all  
 men. But any one may see, he rather refers  
 to the text in the Corinthians.

(n) Εἰδότες ὅτι ὁ ἐγείρας  
 τὸν Κύριον Ἰησοῦν, καὶ ἡμᾶς  
 διὰ Ἰησοῦ ἐγερεῖ.

(p) Προνοούμενοι καλὰ καὶ  
 μόνον ἐνώπιον Κυρίου, ἀλλὰ καὶ  
 ἐνώπιον ἀνθρώπων.

XIV. Ch. ii. But  
 (o) he who raised up  
 him from the dead  
 will raise us up also,  
 if we do his will.

XV. Ch. iv. Let  
 us arm ourselves with  
 the armour of righte-  
 ousness.

XVI. Ch. vi. Al-  
 waies (q) providing  
 what is honest in the  
 fight of God and men.

(o) Ὁ δὲ ἐγείρας αὐτὸν  
 ἐκ νεκρῶν, καὶ ἡμᾶς ἐγερεῖ.

(q) Προνοῦντες θεὶ τῷ καλῷ  
 ἐνώπιον Θεοῦ καὶ ἀνθρώπων.

This

XIX.  
 Be (r)  
 God is no

(r) Μὴ πλ  
 ἀντηρῖζεται.

This also with many other places may afford proof of the first Christian writers citing, or referring to, texts of scripture by memorie, without looking upon them. For which reason *Polycarp* says, *what is honest*, in the singular number, instead of *honest things*.

A. D.  
108.

N. T.

*Polycarp.*

XVII. Gal. i. 1.

But by *Jesus Christ*,  
and *God the Father*,  
who raised him from  
the dead.

XVII. Ch. xii. *Galat.*

Who shall believe in  
our Lord *Jesus Christ*,  
and in his *Father*,  
who raised him from  
the dead.

XVIII. Gal. iv.

26. For *Jerusalem*,  
which is above, is free,  
which is the mother of  
us all.

XVIII. Ch. iii.

— edified in the  
faith delivered to you,  
which is the mother  
of you all."

Perhaps, says Dr.  
*Young*, it should be  
us all.

XIX. Gal. vi. 7.

Be (r) not deceived,  
God is not mocked.

XIX. Ch. v. (s)

Knowing therefore,  
that God is not mock-  
ed.

P

XX.

(r) Μὴ πλανᾶσθε, Θεὸς ὁ  
μυκτηρίζεται.

(s) Εἰδότες ὅτι Θεὸς ὁ  
μυκτηρίζεται.



A. D.  
108.

*Ephes.*

XX. Ephes. ii. 8.  
9. For (t) by grace  
are ye saved, through  
faith, and that not of  
yourselves: it is the  
gift of God—Not  
of works.

*Philip.*

XXI. Philip. ii. 10.  
That at the name of  
Jesus every knee (x)  
should bow, of things  
in heaven, and things  
in earth, and things  
under the earth. 11.  
And that every tongue  
should confess.

Ver. 26. That I  
may rejoice in the day  
of Christ, that I have  
not run in vain.

(t) Τῇ γὰρ χάριτί ἐστε σε-  
σωσμένοι διὰ τῆς πίστεως . . .  
.. ἢ ἐξ ἔργων.

(x) Πᾶν γόνυ κάμψῃ ἰπτα-  
νῶν καὶ ἐπὶ γαίῳν, . . . καὶ πάντα  
γλῶσσαι ἐξομολογήσεται.

XX. Ch. i. Know-  
ing, (u) that by grace  
ye are saved, not of  
works, but by the  
will of God through  
Jesus Christ.

XXI. Ch. ii. To  
whom all things are  
made subject, that are  
in (y) heaven, and  
that are in earth,  
whom every living  
creature serves.

Ch. ix. Being per-  
suaded, that all these  
have not run in vain.  
Speaking of Paul,  
and the other Apo-  
stles, and some o-  
thers.

XXII.

(u) Εἰδότες ὅτι χάριτί ἐστε  
σεσωσμένοι, ἢ ἐξ ἔργων.

(y) Ὡς ὑπετάγη τὰ πάντα  
ἐπὶ ῥάνια καὶ ἐπὶ γαίᾳ· ὧς πάντα  
πνεῦσι λατρεύει.

That  
every  
Christ.

17. P  
out cea

Ver.

(b) fr  
ance of

iii. 15.  
him not  
but adm  
brother.

(z) Ἀδ

χρῆσι.

(b) Ἀπ

πρὸς ἀπίχ

(d) Καὶ μὴ

ἀλλὰ νεφε

XXII. Col. i. 28.

*That we may present every man perfect in Christ.*

XXII. Ch. xii. That <sup>A. D. 108.</sup>

your fruit may be manifest in all, and ye may be perfect in him.

XXIII. 1 Theff. v.

17. Pray (z) without ceasing.

Ver. 22. Abstain (b) from all appearance of evil.

XXIV. 2 Theff.

iii. 15. Yet count (d) him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.

XXIII. Ch. iv. Pray- 1 Theff.

ing (a) without ceasing for all.

Ch. ii. Abstain (c) from all evil.

XXIV. Ch. xi. Giv- 2 Theff.

ing advice about one who had offended, he says: "Be ye also moderate in this, and do not (e) count such as enemies, but call them back, as suffering and erring members.

P 2

XXV.

(z) Ἀδιαλείπτως προσευχεῖσθε.

(b) Ἀπὸ παντὸς εἵδους πορνείας ἀπέχεσθε.

(d) Καὶ μὴ ὡς ἐχθρὸν ἡγείσθε, ἀλλὰ νεθετεύετε ὡς ἀδελφόν.

(a) Ἐντυσχανέσας ἀδιαλείπτως πρεῖ πάντων.

(c) Abstinete vos ab omni malo.

(e) Et non sicut inimicos tales existimetis, sed sicut passibilia membra et errantia eos revoke.

A. D.

108.

1 Tim.

XXV. 1 Tim. ii.

1. 2. *I exhort therefore, that supplications — and giving of thanks, be made for all men; for Kings, and all that are in authority.*

XXVI. 1 Tim. vi.

7. *For (f) we brought nothing with us into this world, and it is certain, that we can carry nothing out ....*  
 10. *For the love of money is the root of all evil.*

Here Polycarp transposeth the order of the words. He used his memorie.

XXVII. In the fifth chapter of this epistle

Polycarp adviseth, that Deacons should not be double-tongued, as St. Paul does 1 Tim. iii.

8. And in that and the following chapter Polycarp gives divers other directions to Pres-

byters

XXV. Ch. xii.

Pray for all the saints: *Pray also for Kings, and powers, and princes.*

XXVI. Ch. iv. But

(g) the love of money is the begining of all troubles. Knowing therefore, that as we brought nothing into the world, so neither, can we carry any thing out. ....

(f) Οὐδέν γὰρ εἰσνεύσαμεν εἰς τὸν κόσμον, δῆλον ὅτι ἐδὲ ἐξενευσκῶν τι δυνάμεθα. 10. Ρίζα γὰρ πάντων κακῶν ἐστὶν ἡ φιλαργυρία.

(g) Ἀρχὴ δὲ πάντων κακῶν ἡ φιλαργυρία. Εἰδότες γὰρ ὅτι οὐδέν εἰσνεύσαμεν εἰς τὸν κόσμον, ἀλλ' ἐδὲ ἐξενευσκῶν τι ἔχομεν.

(b) Εἰ ὑποτασσόμεθα  
 (k) Ἀγαπᾷ.

Chap  
 byters  
 third  
 but th  
 ed in

XX

ii. 11.  
 ful sayi  
 we suffe  
 so reign

XXI

10. Fo  
 bath for  
 ing love  
 world.

XXX

12. An  
 mer of  
 and inte  
 heart.  
 is there a

byters and Deacons, resembling those in the third chapter of the first epistle to *Timothie*: but they need not, I apprehend, be transcribed in this place.

N. T.

*Polycarp.*

XXVIII. 2 Tim.

XXVIII. Ch. v. 2 Tim.

ii. 11. *It is (b) a faithful saying. . . . 12. If we suffer, we shall also reign with him.*

According as he has promised us, that he will raise us up from the dead, and that if we walk worthy of him, we shall also reign (i) with him.

XXIX. 2 Tim. iv.

XXIX. Ch. ix. For

10. *For (k) Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world.*

(l) they loved not this present world.

XXX. Heb. iv.

XXX. Ch. iv. *Hebrews.*

12. *And is a discern-  
er of the thoughts  
and intents of the  
heart. 13. Neither  
is there any creature,*

Knowing, that he  
sees all things, and  
that nothing is hid  
from him, not the  
reasonings, nor the  
that

P 3

(b) Εἰ ὑπομένομεν, καὶ συμ-  
βασιλεύσομεν.

(k) Ἀγαπήσας τὸν νῦν αἰ-  
ῶνα.

(i) Καὶ συμβασιλεύσομεν  
αὐτῷ.

(l) Οὐ γὰρ τὸν νῦν ἠγάπη-  
σαν αἰῶνα.



A. D. <sup>108.</sup> *that is not manifest in intents, nor any secrets of the heart.*  
*his sight : but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do.*

The Author of the epistle to the *Hebrews* useth in this place metaphorical expressions, borrowed from sacrifices, which were flayed, divided, and laid open from the neck to the rump, downwards. *Polycarp* here says, that *widows are to be free (m) from all faults, knowing, that they are the altars of God, and that he sees. . . .* This, together with the resemblance of expression, renders it probable, that *Polycarp* alludes to this text in the epistle to the *Hebrews*.

*Hebrews.* Again. *Polycarp*, Ch. xii. “ Now (n)  
 “ the God and Father of our Lord Jesus  
 “ Christ, and he himself our everlasting  
 “ High Priest, the Son of God, Jesus Christ,  
 “ build

(m) Καὶ παντὸς κακῆ, γνωσκύσας ὅτι εἰς δυσιασθήρια Θεοῦ, καὶ ὅτι πάντα ἡμῶν σκοπεῖται [A. B. *Wake* reads πάντα μωμῶν σκοπεῖται, and translates it, *sees all blemishes*. Vid. *Usser.* not. in h. l.] καὶ ἀέληθεν αὐτὸν ἰδὲν, ἔτε λογισμῶν, ἔτε ἐν νοῶν, ἔτε τι τῶν κρύπτων τῆς καρδίας.

(n) Deus autem et Pater Domini nostri Jesu Christi, et ipse sempiternus Pontifex, Dei filius, Christus Jesus, aedificet vos in fide et caritate.

"build you up in faith and truth." Compare *A. D.*  
*Heb. iv. 14. vi. 20. vii. 3.* 108.

N. T.

Polycarp.

XXXI. 1 Pet. i.

XXXI. Ch. i. In 1 Peter.

8. Whom (o) having  
not seen ye love: in  
whom, though now  
you see him not, yet  
believing, ye rejoice  
with joy unspeakable,  
and full of glorie.

(p) whom, though you  
see him not, ye believe,  
and believing ye rejoice  
with joy unspeakable,  
and full of glorie.

Ver. 13. Where-  
fore girding up the  
loins of your mind, be  
sober.....

Ch. ii. Wherefore,  
girding up the loins,  
serve the Lord in  
fear, and truth....

Ver. 21. Who by  
him do believe in God,  
that raised him up  
from the dead, and  
gave him glorie.

having believed in him  
that raised up our  
Lord Jesus Christ  
from the dead, and  
gave him glorie, and  
a seat at his right  
hand.

XXXII. 1 Pet. ii.

XXXII. Ch. v.

11. I beseech you

Polycarp says, young

P 4

abstain

(o) "Ὁν ἔκ ιδόντες ἀγαπᾶτε,  
εἰς ὃν ἄρτι μὴ ὁρῶντες, πιστεύοντες  
δὲ, ἀγαλλιᾶσθε χαρᾷ ἀνεκ-  
λαλήτῳ καὶ δεδοξασμένῳ.

(p) "Εἰς ὃν ἔκ ιδόντες πιστεύ-  
ετε, πιστεύοντες δὲ ἀγαλλιᾶσθε  
χαρᾷ ἀνεκλαλήτῳ καὶ δεδοξασ-  
μένῳ.

A. D.  
108.

(q) abstain from flesh-ly lusts, which war against the soul.

men ought to restrain themselves from all evil, —(r) because every lust wars against the spirit.

Ver. 12. Having your conversation honest among the Gentils, that whereas they speak against you as evil doers, they may by your good works, which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation.

Ch. x. Having your conversation unreprou-able among the Gen-tils, that by your good works both ye your selves may receive praise, and the Lord may not be blasphem-ed through you.

Ver. 17. Love (s) the brotherhood.

Ch. x. Lovers (t) of the brotherhood.

Ver. 22. Who (u) did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth. 24. Who his

Ch. viii. Let us therefore, without ceasing stedfastly ad- here to our hope—

own

(q) Παρακαλῶν—ἀπέχεσθαι τῶν σαρκικῶν ἐπιθυμιῶν, αἵτινες κρατεύονται κατὰ τῆς ψυχῆς.

(s) Τὴν ἀδελφότητα ἀγαπᾶτε.

(u) Ὁς ἀμαρτίαν ἐκ ἐπὶ κτή-

(r) Ὅτι πᾶσα ἐπιθυμία κατὰ τὸ πνεῦμα ὁσπράττει.

(t) Fraternitatis amatores.

στ.

own se  
in his  
tree.

iii. 9. J  
ing ev  
railing

Ver  
suffer f  
sake, ha

5. Who  
count to  
ready  
quick an

σιν, οὐδὲ ἐ  
σώματι αὐ  
μαρτίας ἡμ  
τῷ σώματι  
(γ) Μὴ  
ἀντὶ κακῆς,  
λοιδωρίας.

own self bare our sins  
in his own body on the  
tree.

(x) which is Jesus <sup>A. D.</sup>  
Christ: *Who bare our* <sup>108.</sup>  
*sins in his own body on*  
*the tree: who did no*  
*sin, neither was guile*  
*found in his mouth.*

XXXIII. 1 Pet.  
iii. 9. Not (y) render-  
ing evil for evil, or  
railing for railing.

Ver. 14. *And if ye*  
*suffer for righteousness*  
*sake, happy are ye. . .*

XXXIII. Ch. ii. Not  
(z) rendering evil for  
evil, or railing for  
railing.

Ch. viii. But suffer-  
ed all for us, that we  
might live through  
[in] him. Let us  
therefore imitate his  
patience: And if we  
suffer for him, we  
shall glorify him.

XXXIV. 1 Pet. iv.  
5. *Who shall give ac-*  
*count to him that is*  
*ready to judge the*  
*quick and the dead.*

XXXIV. Ch. ii.  
Who comes (as) the  
judge of the quick and  
the dead.

Ver.

σιν, οὐδὲ εὐρέθη δόλος ἐν τῷ  
σώματι αὐτοῦ. 24. Ὅς τὰς ἁ-  
μαρτίας ἡμῶν αὐτὸς ἀνένεγκεν  
τῷ σώματι αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ τὸ ξύλον.  
(γ) Μὴ ἀποδιδόντες κακὸν  
ἀντὶ κακοῦ, ἢ λοιδορίαν ἀντὶ  
λοιδορίας.

(x) Ὅς ἀνένεγκεν ἡμῶν τὰς  
ἁμαρτίας ἐπὶ τὸ ξύλον ὃς ἁ-  
μαρτίαν ἡμῶν ἐποίησεν, οὐδὲ εὐρέθη  
δόλος ἐν τῷ σώματι αὐτοῦ.  
(z) Μὴ ἀποδιδόντες κακὸν  
ἀντὶ κακοῦ, ἢ λοιδορίαν ἀντὶ  
λοιδορίας.



A. D.  
108.

Ver. 7. Be ye therefore sober, and (a) watch unto prayer.

XXXV. I Pet. v.

5. Yea all of you be subject one to another.

I John.

XXXVI. I John ii.

7. The old commandment is the word, which ye have heard from the beginning.

XXXVII. John iv.

3. And (c) every spirit, that confesseth not, that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: and this is that spirit of Antichrist, whereof you have heard, &c.

Jude.

XXXVIII. Jude ver. 3.— (e) earnestly

(a) Καὶ νήψατε εἰς τὰς προσευχάς.

(c) Καὶ πᾶν πνεῦμα ὃ μὴ ὁμολογῇ τὸν Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἐν σαρκὶ ἐληλυθότα, ἐκ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἔστι· καὶ τοῦτο ἐστὶ τὸ τοῦ ἀντιχρίστου, κ. λ.

(e) Ἐπαγωνίζεσθαι τῇ ἀπαξ παραδοθείσῃ τοῖς ἀγίοις πίσει.

Ch. vii. Watching (b) unto prayer.

XXXV. Ch. x.

Be all of you subject one to another.

XXXVI. Ch. vii.

Let us return to the word that was delivered to us from the beginning.

XXXVII. Ch. vii.

For (d) whoever confesseth not, that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is Antichrist.

XXXVIII. Ch. iii.

To edifie (f) your- contend

(b) Νήφοντες εἰς προσευχάς.

(d) Πᾶς γὰρ ὃς ἀν μὴ ὁμολογῇ Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἐν σαρκὶ ἐληλυθέναι Ἀντίχριστός ἐστι.

(f) Οἰκοδομεῖσθαι ἑν τῇ δοθείσῃ ὑμῖν πίσει.

Chap.

contend which vered t

XXI

seems t general oracles says the ment, we befo ferred t pumb.

XL.

ever for account tings of the wor short a spect, v and tha

on their chiefly, these ex books t

XLI.

tions of

(g) Καὶ μίας, καὶ λῆξ ἐστὶ τοῦ

contend for the faith, selves in the faith de- *A. D.*  
which was once deli- *108.* livered [given] to you. }  
vered to the saints.

XXXIX. He has this declaration, which *Respect for*  
seems to respect the writings of the N. T. in *Scripture.*  
general. “ And (g) whosoever perverts the  
oracles of the Lord to his own lusts, and  
says there is neither resurrection, nor judge-  
ment, he is the first born of Satan.” And  
we before saw the epistle to the *Ephesians* re-  
ferred to under the term of *Holy Scriptures*.  
pumb. ii.

XL. Thus I have given (omitting how- *Respect for*  
ever some lesser things) a large and distinct *Scripture.*  
account of *Polycarp's* testimonie to the wri-  
tings of the N. T. So many exhortations in  
the words of Christ and his Apostles, in so  
short a letter, are a lively evidence of the re-  
spect, which Christians had for these books,  
and that these things were deeply engraved  
on their memories. For it is from thence  
chiefly, as I apprehend, *Polycarp* borrowed  
these expressions, without looking into the  
books themselves.

XLI. We have then in St. *Polycarp* quota- *The sum of*  
tions of the first epistle to the *Corinthians*, the *Polycarp's*  
epistles *testimonie.*

(g) Καὶ ὅς ἂν μεθοδεύῃ τὰ λόγια τῆ κυρίου πρὸς τὰς ἐπιθυ-  
μίας, καὶ λέγῃ μὴτε ἀνάσσειν, μὴτε κρίσιν εἶναι, ἢ τὸ πρῶτότα-  
τον ἐστὶ τοῦ Σατανᾶ. c. vii.

A. D.  
108.

epistles to the *Ephesians*, and *Philippians*, and both the epistles to the *Thessalonians*. Words of our Lord, found in St. *Matthew's* and St. *Luke's* Gospels, are quoted as spoken by him. And beside these, we have references, which may be reckoned undoubted, to the *Acts of the Apostles*, the epistles to the *Romans*, first and second to the *Corinthians*, *Galatians*, *Ephesians*, first and second to the *Thessalonians*, first and second to *Timothie*, first of St. *Peter*, and first of St. *John*, and a probable reference to the epistle to the *Hebrews*. Those to the epistle to the *Colossians*, and the epistle of St. *Jude*, are only doubtful.

The respect for the books of the New Testament appears in the great number of allusions to them, and in some particular expressions, in which they are called *sacred scriptures*, and *oracles of the Lord*.

C H A P.



The R

tyr

TI

AP

I N

of

the N.

epistle

Thoug

time af

lippians

will ver

monie c

his chur

to be c

been wr

I. §.

things t

the Lor

(a) 'Iva  
nov μαρτ



## CHAP. VII.

*The Relation of St. POLYCARP's martyrdom: And general OBSERVATIONS on the testimonie of the APOSTOLICAL FATHERS.*

I NOW proceed to give a brief account of the notice taken of the books of the N. T. by the church of *Smyrna*, in their epistle concerning *Polycarp's* martyrdom. Though it was not writ, until a considerable time after the epistle of *Polycarp* to the *Philippians*, (as we have before shewn) yet it will very properly stand here. For the testimonie of *Polycarp* is also the testimonie of his church: and their testimonie is likewise to be considered as his, the epistle having been written presently after his death.

I. §. 1. They say at the begining: " All *Matthew.*  
things that went before were done, that (a)  
the Lord might shew us from above [or,  
from

(a) "ἵνα ἡμῖν ὁ κύριος ἀνωθεν ἐπιδείξῃ τὸ κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον μαρτύριον.



*from the very first,]* a martyrdom according to the Gospel. For he expected to be delivered up, as the Lord also did, that we likewise might be imitators of him."

Undoubtedly here is a reference to the historie of our Lord's sufferings, and to his being betrayed and apprehended, as shewn at the later end of the several Gospels. But as *Polycarp* had retired from *Smyrna* for a while, and was taken in the place of his retreat; I think it likely, that there is also a reference to *Matth. x. 23. But when they persecute you in one city, flee ye into another.* And §. 4. speaking of a Christian, who had offered himself to the Proconsul, and afterwards was affrighted at the sight of the wild beasts, they say: "We do not (*b*) commend those who offer themselves: forasmuch as the Gospel teaches us no such thing." Referring perhaps to the same text, as well as to other things: however in both these places calling the historie of Jesus Christ and his doctrine, *the Gospel*.

II. §. 7. They say: The serjeants and other officers who went to look for *Polycarp*, "went (*c*) with their usual arms, as against

(*b*) Ἐπειδὴ οὐχ οὕτως διδάσκει τὸ εὐαγγέλιον.

(*c*) Μετὰ τῶν συνήθων ὅπλων, ὡς ἐπὶ λησίων τρέχοντες.

gainst  
xxvi.

III.

of 1 C  
the sou  
are re  
neither  
entered  
the like  
think i  
Corinth

IV.

to Rom.

V. §

there in  
thee (*d*)  
Jesus C  
characte  
from th  
Christ is  
ever. Ch  
priesthood  
copy of  
stands th  
nal and b

(*d*) Διὰ τ  
H. E. p. 13  
(*e*) Συν τ

gainst a thief." Referring perhaps to *Matth.* xxvi. 55.

III. §. ii. They make use of the words *1 Cor.* of *1 Cor.* ii. 9. "And with the eyes of the soul looked to those good things, which are reserved for those that endure, *which neither ear has heard, nor eye seen, nor have entered into the heart of man.*" And though the like sense is also in *Isai.* lxiv. 4. yet I think it plain they refer to the epistle to the *Corinthians.*

IV. §. x. There seems to be a reference *Titus.* to *Rom.* xiii. 1. and *Tit.* iii. 1.

V. §. xiv. *Polycarp* in a prayer of his *Hebrews.* there inserted says: "I praise and glorify thee (d) through the eternal High-Priest, Jesus Christ, thy well beloved son" This character may be thought to be borrowed from the epistle to the *Hebrews*, where Christ is said to be *made an High Priest for ever.* Ch. vi. 20. and to have an *unchangeable priesthood.* Ch. vii. 24. Indeed, in the *Greek* copy of this epistle in *Cotolerius* this place stands thus: *I (e) glorify thee with the eternal and heavenly Jesus Christ.* But in *Eusebe* it

(d) Διὰ τοῦ αἰωνίου ἀρχιερέως Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ. Apud Euseb. H. E. p. 133. D.

(e) Σὺν τῷ αἰωνίῳ καὶ ἐπουρανίῳ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ.

it is as I have given the place at first. And with him the old *Latin* version, published by *Usher*, agrees in the main, saying: *By (f) the eternal High Priest, the all-powerful Jesus Christ.*

VI. §. xvii. When they say, "Christ (g) suffered, who was without spot, for sinners," they may be thought to refer to 1 Pet. iii. 19. But I think the place not very material. Nor are those words in *Eusebe*, or his translator *Rufin*, or the ancient *Latin* version, as *Usher* observes.

*Jude.*

VII. In the salutation, at the beginning of this epistle are these words: "Mercie (h) and peace, and love from God the Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ be multiplied." This is very agreeable to Jude ver. 2. *Mercie unto you, and peace and love be multiplied.* However compare 1 Pet. i. 2. *Grace unto you and peace be multiplied.* 2 Pet. i. 2. *Grace and peace be multiplied unto you.*

*The sum of this testimony.*

VIII. Any one is able to add this testimony to that of *Polycarp* in his Epistle, of which we there gave a summarie view. The principal

(f) Per aeternum pontificem omnipotentem Jesum Christum. Vid. notas *Usher*. in loc. apud *Coteler*. Patr. Apost.

(g) Ἀμωμον ὑπὲρ ἀμαρτωλῶν.

(h) Ἐλεος, εἰρήνη, καὶ ἀγάπη ἀπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς καὶ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν ἰησοῦ χριστοῦ πληθυνθεῖν.

(i) Num.

(k) In §.

(l) See her foregoing ch.

principal thing to be observed here is, that the church of *Smyrna* has more plainly given the title of *Gospel* to the historie of our Lord by the Evangelists (*i*): and perhaps in the (*k*) second place, where that word was used by them, they intend the New Testament in general. They may be reckoned likewise to give some confirmation to the supposition, that St. *Polycarp* was acquainted (*l*) with the epistle to the *Hebrews*.

VIII. Having now gone through all the *Apostolical* Fathers, it will not be disagreeable to conclude our extracts out of them with some general observations. *Le Clerc's* Dissertation on the four Gospels, already mentioned, will afford us several. He speaks of these Fathers in this order: *Clement, Barnabas, Hermas, Ignatius, Polycarp*. I shall however put down his observations in the order I have quoted these writers, which is not very different from his. I shall take no particular notice here of the Fragment, called St. *Clement's* second epistle; because we have shewn, it does not belong to this time.

Q

I. "Bar-

(i) Num. i.

(k) In §. 4. in the remark on num. i.

(l) See here num. v. and compare it with *Polycarp* in the foregoing ch. num. 30.



1. "*Barnabas*, says (*m*) *Le Clerc*, has many more passages out of the Old Testament than the New: but then almost throughout that epistle he argues against the *Jews*, against whom it was in vain to allege the New."

I think, there is another very obvious reason of this; arising from the time and character of the writer, as I have shewn in my remarks upon him.

2. "*Clement* (*n*) has more passages out of the Old Testament, and oftener alludes to it than to the New. But yet he quotes this more than once, and often refers to it. . . . . Indeed he does not mention the names of the writers of the New Testament. Nor is it his custom to mention the names of the books or writers of the Old Testament."

3. "*Her-*

(*m*) *Barnabas* multò plura habet ex vetere Testamento, quam ex novo; sed per totam fermè epistolam contra Judæos ratiocinatur; contra quos novum proferre non potuit. nisi illis ludibrium debere vellet. Dissertat. iii. de quatuor Evang. p. 543. b.

(*n*) Ex hisce autem [*scriptoribus*] *Clemens* sæpius quidem attulit loca deprompta e veteri Testamento, atque ad id aliusit, quam ad libros novi, ex quo etiam pauciora profert. Sed tamen non semel posterius hoc laudat, nec raro ad id respicit. . . . . Non profert quidem nomina scriptorum Novi Testamenti; sed nec Veteris librorum aut scriptorum nomina solet proferre. *Ibid.*

Chap

3.

nor th  
cause  
precep

4.

Testam  
seems  
to the

*Le C*

same w  
gard to  
utterly

I think  
tender to  
Old.

5. "

ty times  
recited t  
once refe  
ment."

These  
appear to

(o) *Herm*

quia visiones  
cepta expon

(p) *Ignat*

quam Novum

(q) *Polye*

Testamenti,  
locum Veter

3. "*Hermas* (o) quotes neither the Old nor the New Testament. The reason is, because he only relates his *Visions*, and delivers precepts as received from angels."

4. "*Ignatius* (p) does not quote the Old Testament oftener than the New. Nay, he seems to refer or allude to this oftener than to the other."

*Le Clerc* speaks of the *smaller* epistles, the same we have made use of, without any regard to the *larger* or *interpolated*, which he utterly rejects. But he speaks modestly, for I think, that *Ignatius* has alluded much oftener to the New Testament, than to the Old.

5. "*Polycarp* (q) has alluded above twenty times to texts of the New Testament, or recited the very words of them, and scarce once refers to any passage of the Old Testament."

These are *Le Clerc's* observations, which appear to me very much to our purpose.

Q 2

IX. I

(o) *Hermas* nec Vetus nec Novum Testamentum laudat, quia visiones suas narrat, et praecepta veluti ab Angelis accepta exponit. *Ibid.*

(p) *Ignatius* non frequentius laudat Vetus Testamentum, quam Novum, atque ad hoc crebrius respicere videtur. *Ibid.*

(q) *Polycarpus* pluries quam vigesies alludit ad loca Novi Testamenti, aut ea verbo tenus laudat: vix semel respicit ad locum Veteris. *Ibid.*

IX. I would observe farther, *first*, that all these are but short pieces. The largest is the *Shepherd of Hermas*, which is as large as several of the other, and almost as large as all the rest put together. But it was inconsistent with the nature of that work for the writer to quote books.

2. All these pieces, except the *Shepherd of Hermas*, are epistles, writ to Christians: who, it is likely, needed not at that time to be particularly informed, what books they ought to receive: but only to be admonished, to attend to the things contained in them, and to maintain their respect for them, as is here often done.

3. Considering the shortness, and the nature of these pieces; it is reasonable to suppose, that most, or all of these writers, and those they write to, received more books, or writings of the New Testament, as sacred, or canonical, than those expressly named, or clearly alluded to by them. For as these several pieces are short, so they never design to give a list, or catalogue of the books, either of the Old, or the New Testament, received by Christians. All the mention made of either is only occasional. Beside that we have lost divers letters written by *St. Polycarp*; both

to churches, and particular persons. It cannot therefore by any means be concluded, that his one remaining epistle to the *Philippians* gives us full information of all the books received by him. It is most reasonable to suppose, it contains quotations, or allusions to a part only of those books, which he received and owned, as the rule of Christian belief and practise.

4. In the writings of these *Apostolical Fathers* there is all the notice taken of the books of the New Testament, that could be expected. *Barnabas*, though so early a writer, appears to have been acquainted with the Gospel of St. *Matthew*. *Clement*, writing in the name of the church of *Rome* to the church of *Corinth*, on occasion of some dissension there, desires them to *take into their hands the epistle of the Blessed Apostle Paul*, writ to them: and refers them particularly to a part of that epistle, in which he admonished them against strife and contention. He has likewise in his epistle divers clear and undeniable allusions to St. *Paul's* epistle writ to the church, over which he presided, and in whose name he wrote. Not to mention at present other things.

- Q 3

5. Quo.



5. Quotations there could not be, as we have often observed, in the book of *Hermas*. But allusions there are to the books of the New Testament, such as were suitable to his design.

6. *Ignatius*, writing to the church of *Ephesus*, takes notice of the epistle of *Paul* writ to them, in which he *makes mention of them in Christ Jesus*.

7. Lastly *Polycarp*, writing to the *Philippians*, refers them to the epistle of the *Blessed and renowned Paul*, writ to them: if not also, as I imagine, to the epistles sent to the *Thessalonians*, Christians of the same province. Not to mention now his express quotations of other books of the New Testament, or his numerous, and manifest allusions to them.

8. From these particulars here mentioned it is apparent, that they have not omitted to take notice of any book of the N. T. which, as far as we are able to judge, their design led them to mention. Their silence therefore about any other books can be no prejudice to their genuinenesse, if we shall hereafter meet with credible testimonies to them. And we may have good reason to believe, that these *Apostolical Fathers* were some of those  
per-

persons, from whom succeeding writers received that full and satisfactorie evidence, which they appear to have had concerning the several books of the New Testament.

9. And though I do not here design to sum up the whole evidence given by these writers, from their allusions, and other particulars, but only to mention some general observations; yet it ought to be here remembered, that *Ignatius* has made use of terms denoting a code, or, collection of *Gospels* and *Epistles*.





## CHAP. VIII.

### EVANGELISTS *in the reign of* TRAJAN.

A. D.  
112.  
Of the  
Gospels.

**EUSEBE** (a) in the historie of things  
in the reign of *Trajan* has this remark-  
able passage :

“ Among those who were illustrious at  
that time was *Quadratus*, who, together  
with the daughters of *Philip*, is said to  
have enjoyed the gift of prophetic. And  
beside these there were at that time many  
other eminent persons, who (b) had the  
first rank in the succession of the Apostles:  
Who, being the worthe disciples of such  
men, every where built up the churches, the  
foundations of which had been laid by the  
Apostles: extending likewise their preach-  
ing yet farther, and scattering abroad the  
salutarie seeds of the kingdom of heaven  
all

(a) H. E. L. 3. c. 37.

(b) Τὴν πρώτην τάξιν τῆς τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐπίχοντες δια-  
δοχῆς.

Cha

‘ all

‘ cip

‘ wo

‘ phi

‘ pre

‘ nec

‘ per

‘ am

‘ the

I P

this

writin

In the

count

in th

follow

Rome,

Jebe d

clefiast

yet I

fully

reign

Gospe

gether

trine o

all

(c) K

# Chap. VIII. EVANGELISTS *in the*, &c. 233

all over the world. For many of the disciples of that time, whose souls the divine word had inspired with an ardent love of philosophie, first fulfilled our Saviour's precept, distributing their substance to the necessitous. Then travelling abroad they performed the work of Evangelists, being ambitious to preach Christ (c) and deliver the scripture of the Divine Gospels."

I presume, I have not improperly placed this passage here. *Eusebe*, as I just said, is writing the historie of things under *Trajan*. In the foregoing chapter he had given an account of *Ignatius* and his writings, who died in the tenth of *Trajan*. And in the two following chapters he speaks of *Clement* of *Rome*, and *Papias*. Though therefore *Eusebe* does not alwaies place things in his *Ecclesiastical Historie* in the exact order of time; yet I think it must be allowed, that he was fully persuaded, that before the end of the reign of *Trajan*, who died in 117, the Gospels were well known, and collected together: And they, who preached the doctrine of Christ to those who had not heard it,

A. D.  
112.

(c) Καὶ τὴν τῶν θεῶν εὐαγγελίων παραδίδου γραφὴν.



A. D.

112.

it, carried the Gospels with them, and delivered them to their converts. They must therefore have been before this for some time in use, and in the highest esteem in the churches planted by the Apostles. It must have been no difficult thing at that time to know the genuinnesse of writings, which were of so great authority with them. And certainly they were well assured of it, or they had not so highly esteemed them. The persons, of whom *Eusebe* here speaks, were the immediate successors of the Apostles, and had the first rank among them. And they lived a good part of their time in the very first centurie, as well as St. *Ignatius*, and St. *Clement*.

There can be, I think, but one exception to my placing this passage here, in the reign of *Trajan*, at the year 112, which is, that this is not a passage of any ancient writer of this time, but of *Eusebe*, an author of the fourth centurie. To which I would answer, that it is reasonable to suppose, *Eusebe* had good ground from ancient authors, for what he here says. And that the Gospels were before now well known, and in great esteem, and collected together, appears probable from  
what

Chap

what

cal F

Ignat

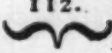
add :

many

writer

Chap. VIII. *reign of* TRAJAN.

235

what we ourselves have seen in the *Apostoli- A. D.*  
*cal Fathers* still remaining, particularly in <sup>112.</sup>   
*Ignatius*. If this does not satisfy, I would  
add: that I do not intend to bring forward  
many more passages of *Eusebe*, or any other  
writer, in this manner.



C H A P.



## CHAP. IX.

### PAPIAS.

**A. D.**  
**116.** *PAPIAS* is placed by *Cave* (a) at the year 110. According to others he flourished about the year (b) 115, or (c) 116. How long he lived, is uncertain. He is said by some (d), to have been a Martyr. But as this is not mentioned by *Eusebe*, or *Jerome*; I think, it need not be much regarded. *Irenaeus* (e) speaks of him as a hearer of *John*, and companion of *Polycarp*. And by *John* seems to intend the Apostle and Evangelist.

*Eusebe* in his Ecclesiastical Historie, has a whole chapter concerning him, beside what he says of him in other places. There is no part of that chapter, which we shall not have occasion for, at one time or other. I think therefore, though it be long, it will be the shortest course to take it all here at once.

“ There

(a) Hist. Lit. Papias.

(b) *Basnage Ann. P. E.* 115. n. 8.

(c) *Pagi Crit. in Bar. A. D.* 116. Cleric. H. E.

(d) *Vid. Cave ibid.*

(e) *L. v. c.* 33.

Chap

“

‘ of

‘ Ora

‘ men

‘ after

‘ was

‘ of

‘ in b

‘ comp

But P

by no

‘ any

‘ he h

‘ faith

‘ ed w

‘ word

‘ togeth

‘ have

‘ byters

‘ the tr

‘ most m

(f) H.

(A) It is

hearer of J

only of Jol

Spic. T. 2.

Papias Not

Ann. 115.

p. 352. N

(b) Παπ

“ There are, says (f) *Eusebe*, five books  
 ‘ of *Papias*, entitled an *Explication of the*  
 ‘ *Oracles of the Lord*. These *Irenaeus* makes  
 ‘ mention of, as the only books writ by him,  
 ‘ after this manner : *These things Papias, who*  
 ‘ *was a bearer of John, and a companion*  
 ‘ *of Polycarp, an (g) ancient man, attests*  
 ‘ *in his fourth book : for there are five books*  
 ‘ *composed by him.* Thus speaks *Irenaeus*.  
 But *Papias* in the preface of his books does  
 by no means say, that (A) he heard or saw  
 ‘ any of the holy Apostles : but only, that  
 ‘ he had received the things concerning the  
 ‘ faith from those, who were well acquaint-  
 ‘ ed with them, which he shews in these  
 ‘ words : *I shall not think much to set down*  
 ‘ *together with my interpretations what I*  
 ‘ *have learned (h) from the Elders, [or Pres-*  
 ‘ *byters] and do well remember, confirming*  
 ‘ *the truth by them.* For I took no delight, as  
 ‘ most men do, in those that talk a great deal,  
 ‘ but

A. D.  
116.

(f) H. E. L. 3. c. 39.

(g) Ἀρχαῖος ἀνὴρ.

(A) It is therefore still a question, whether *Papias* was a hearer of *John* the Apostle, as *Irenaeus* seems to intimate, or only of *John* the Elder. See this question considered by *Grabe* *Spic. T.* 2. p. 26. &c. *Tillem. Mem. Ec. T.* 2. p. 2. *St. Papias* Note i. *Pagi Crit. in Baron.* 116. n. v. *Basnag. Ann.* 115. n. ix. *Beausobre Hist. de Manich.* liv. 2. ch. 2: p. 352. Note (2.)

(h) Παρὰ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων.



A. D.  
116.

but in those that teach the truth: nor in those that relate strange precepts, but in them that relate the precepts which the Lord has entrusted us with, and which proceed from the truth itself. And if at any time I met with one who had conversed with the Elders, I enquired after the sayings of the Elders: What Andrew, or what Peter said: or what Philip, what Thomas, or James had said: What John or Matthew, or what any other of the disciples of the Lord were wont to say: and what Aristion, or John the Presbyter, disciples of the Lord, say: For I was of opinion, that I could not profit so much by books (i) as by the living. Where it is proper to observe, that he twice mentions the name of John. The former of whom he reckons with Peter, James, Matthew, and the rest of the Apostles, manifestly intending the Evangelist. Then making a distinction in his discourse, he places the other John with the others, who are not of the number of Apostles, putting Aristion before him. And he expressly calls him Presbyter. By which too is shewn the truth of their

(i) Ὅσον τὰ παρὰ ζώσης φωνῆς καὶ μνήμης.

' their account, who have said, that there  
 ' were two in *Asia* of that name: and that  
 ' there were two sepulchres at *Ephesus*, and  
 ' that each of them are still said to be the  
 ' sepulchre of *John*. This is worthie of our  
 ' remark. For it is likely, that the *Revela-*  
 ' *tion*, which goes under the name of  
 ' *John*, was seen by the second, if not by  
 ' the first. This *Papias* then, of whom we  
 ' have been speaking, confesseth, that he re-  
 ' ceived the Apostles sayings from those who  
 ' conversed with them. And says, that he  
 ' was a hearer of *Aristion*, and *John* the *Pres-*  
 ' *byter*. And indeed he often mentions them  
 ' by name, and puts down in his writings  
 ' the traditions he had received from them.  
 ' Nor will our mention of these things, I  
 ' suppose, be judged unprofitable. It will  
 ' be worth while to add here to the forci-  
 ' words of *Papias* some other of his passages,  
 ' in which he mentions some miracles, and  
 ' other things, which had come to him by  
 ' tradition. That *Philip* the Apostle resided  
 ' with his daughters at *Hierapolis*, has been  
 ' shewn in some things we have (k) already  
 ' produced. Now we are to observe how

' *Papias*,

(k) *L. 3. c. 31.*

A. D.

116.

AA. ii.

23. 24.

*Papias*, who lived at the same time, mentions a wonderful relation he had received from *Philip's* daughters. For he relates, that in his time *a dead man was raised to life*. He also relates another miracle of *Justus* sur-named *Barsabas*: *That he drank deadly poison, and by the grace of the Lord suffered no harm*. Now that this *Justus* after the ascension of our Saviour was set forth by the Holy Apostles together with *Matthias*, and that they prayed, that one of them might be allotted to fill up their number in the room of *Judas* the traytor, the scripture of the *Acts* relates in this manner: *And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was sur-named Justus, and Matthias. And they prayed, and said*. And other things the same writer has related, which he received by unwritten tradition, and some strange parables of our Saviour, and sermons of his, and several other things of a fabulous kind. Among which he says likewise, that there shall be a thousand years after the resurrection of the dead, wherein the kingdom of Christ shall corporally subsist upon this earth. Which opinion, I suppose, he was led into by misunderstanding the Apostolical narrations: and for

want

' wan  
 ' they  
 ' he (  
 ' may  
 ' he g  
 ' stical  
 ' opini  
 ' man  
 ' main  
 ' ing h  
 ' the f  
 ' the I  
 ' byter  
 ' reade  
 ' join t  
 ' which  
 ' the C  
 ' Presb  
 ' interp  
 ' he re  
 ' which  
 ' For be  
 ' of the  
 ' followe  
 ' the pro  
 ' the wa

(1) Σφδλ  
 λγων, τει

want of seeing into those things, which they spoke mystically, and in figures. For he (1) was a man of no great capacity, as may be conjectured from his writings. Yet he gave occasion to a great many ecclesiastical writers after him to be of the same opinion, who respected the antiquity of the man: as *Irenaeus*, and the rest who have maintained that opinion. In the same writing he delivers many other narrations of the forementioned *Aristion* of the words of the Lord, and traditions of *John* the Presbyter. To which we refer the curious reader. But it is requisite, we should subjoin to his fore-cited passages a tradition, which he has concerning *Mark*, who wrote the Gospel, in these words: *And this the Presbyter [or Elder] said: Mark being the interpreter of Peter wrote exactly whatever he remembered: But not in the order in which things were spoken or done by Christ. For he was neither a bearer, nor a follower of the Lord. But, as I said, afterwards followed Peter; who made his discourses for the profit of those that heard him, but not in the way of a regular historie of our Lord's*

R

words.

(1) Σφόδρα γὰρ τοι σμικρὸς ὦν τὸν νῦν, ὡς ἂν ἐκ τῶν αὐτῶν λόγων, τεκμηριώμενον εἰπεῖν, φαίνεται.



A. D.

116.

words. Mark however committed no mistake in writing some things, as they occurred to his memorie. For this one thing he (m) made his care, to omit nothing which he had heard, and to say nothing false in what he related. Thus Papias writes of Mark. Concerning Matthew he says: Matthew wrote the [divine] oracles in the Hebrew tongue, and every one interpreted them, as he was able. He also brings testimonies out of the first epistle of John, and of Peter in like manner. He relates also another storie of a woman accused of many crimes before the Lord, which is (n) contained in the Gospel according to the Hebrews."

It should be just observed, that in another place (o) Eusebe, speaking of Ignatius and Polycarp, says: "At the same time flourished Papias, Bishop of Hierapolis, an eloquent man, and skilful in the scriptures." But Valesius in his notes offers divers reasons for believing this last character to be an interpolation: it being wanting in several manuscripts, and also in the translation of

Ruffin.

(m) Ὡς τε εἰδὲν ἡμαρτε Μάρκῳ, ὥτως ἐνια γραφας ἐστὶν ἐμνημόνευσεν· ἐνὸς γὰρ ἐποίησατο πρόνοιαν, τὸ μὴ εἶναι παραλιπεῖν, ἢ ψεύσασθαι τὸ ἐν αὐτοῖς.

(n) Ἦν τὸ καθ' Ἑβραῖος εὐαγγέλιον περιέχει.

(o) H. E. l. 3. c. 36. in.

Chap

Ruffin,

the ab

I ne

rome in

little m

we ma

shop of

five bo

of the I

Omi

Papias

Historie

and his

the fore

notice o

We mu

said, or

and St.

postles, 1

the stori

the Hebr

the Hebr

1.) H

genuine

It was w

No one,

2.) P

Hebrew.

*Ruffin*, and contrarie to what *Eusebe* says in the above cited chapter.

A. D.

116.

I need not put down distinctly what *Jerome* in his catalogue says of *Papias*, it being little more than a transcript of *Eusebe*. Only we may observe, that he assures us, he was Bishop of *Hierapolis* in *Asia*, and that he wrote five books, called an *Explication of the words of the Lord*.

Omitting now the confirmation, which *Papias* affords to the Facts of the Evangelical Historie, in what he says of our Blessed Lord and his Apostles; there are divers things in the foregoing chapter of *Eusebe* to be taken notice of, very much to our present purpose. We must by all means observe what is here said, or hinted, concerning *St. Matthew's*, and *St. Mark's* Gospels, the *Acts* of the *Apostles*, some other books of the N. T. and the storie contained in the *Gospel according to the Hebrews*.

#### 1. Of *St. Matthew's Gospel*.

1.) Here is an authentic testimonie to the genuinenesse of the Gospel of *St. Matthew*. It was well known in the time of *Papias*. No one doubted, but it was written by him.

2.) *Papias* says, this Gospel was writ in *Hebrew*. The same thing we shall hereafter

*A. D.* find often affirmed by ancient Christian writers. Nevertheless, some very learned men have disputed this. They think, succeeding writers have taken this account upon trust from *Papias*, without duly considering the matter. I think it must be allowed, there are not in our *Greek Gospel of St. Matthew* any marks of a translation. But of this I shall say no more here.

3.) The particular observation concerning *St. Matthew's Gospel*, that it was writ in *Hebrew*, seems to imply, that it is the only Gospel that was writ originally in that language.

4.) He says, *every one interpreted it as he was able*. Which some have thought to be one specimen of this man's weak capacity: for it requires some knowledge in the *Hebrew* tongue, to interpret a book writ in that language.

5.) Allowing *St. Matthew's Gospel* to have been writ in *Hebrew*, it does not follow from what *Papias* says, that there was then no *Greek Gospel of St. Matthew*, or that *Papias* knew of no such. *Papias* collected accounts of former things from any persons whom he thought credible. What he says therefore of *every one interpreting it as he was able*, may relate

relate  
written  
what  
Gospel  
*Hebrew*  
translat  
ted it,

Tha  
there w  
*thew*,  
allusion  
larly th  
being  
our *Gr*  
in the

1.)  
Gospel  
concern  
byter,  
*John*.  
interpre  
Gospel  
ter's ser  
could  
Apostle  
writing  
Apostle

relate only to some short time after it was written. All that can be concluded from what *Papias* says, is, that he thought the Gospel of *Matthew* was written originally in *Hebrew*: and that for some time, till a *Greek* translation was published, every one interpreted it, as he could.

That at the time of *Papias*, and before, there was extant a *Greek* Gospel of *St. Matthew*, is apparent from the quotations, or allusions of the *Apostolical* Fathers, particularly those of *Ignatius* and *Polycarp*; there being a great agreement between them and our *Greek* Gospel, not only in sense, but also in the very words.

### 2. Of *St. Mark's* Gospel.

1.) Here is an authentic testimonie to the Gospel of *St. Mark*. What *Papias* writes concerning it, he had received from the Presbyter, meaning undoubtedly the Presbyter *John*. The Presbyter said, *Mark* was the interpreter and follower of *Peter*, and the Gospel writ by him was composed out of *Peter's* sermons. And better materials no man could have. Nor could any man, not an Apostle himself, have better advantages for writing a Gospel, than frequent hearing the Apostle, and intimate conversation with him.

R 3

2.) But

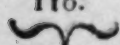
A. D.

116.



A. D.

116.



2.) But we need not be determined absolutely by the judgement of the Elder, *that Mark did not write in the order, in which things were spoken or done by Christ*. For though *Peter* in his sermons might not always deliver things in the order of time in which they happened, nor in each sermon every particular here related; yet there was usually in his sermons some regard to the order of time. And *Mark*, who long attended on him, and often heard him preach, would certainly be able to put the whole together, when he came to write, very much in the order of time, in which things were spoken or done. And if *Peter's* public instructions had not fully qualified him for writing a regular historie, he had in his conversation with *Peter* frequent opportunities of making farther enquiries about any matters he doubted of.

3.) The Presbyter, according to this account, put the credit and authority of *Mark's* Gospel upon it's being a true and faithful relation of the preaching, or sermons, of the Apostle *Peter*. This is manifest from every particular there mentioned.

4.) However it ought by no means to be overlooked, that in another place *Eusebe*, after he had put down what *Clement* of  
Alex.

Chap.

Alexand

(p) Pappim.

What  
pose: th  
desirous  
their useMark to  
doctrine

That th

ties, till  
when thdone, h  
men, ahis auth  
churchesClement  
And Pwith hi  
Fromconclud  
relatedthe fore  
likewise

(p) Hif

(q) — x

... συνεπι  
ματι Παπ

*Alexandria* says of *Mark's* Gospel, adds: *And* <sup>A. D.</sup>  
(p) *Papias Bishop of Hierapolis* agrees with <sup>116.</sup>  
him.

What *St. Clement* says there is to this purpose: that *St. Peter's* hearers at *Rome* were desirous of having his sermons writ down for their use: That they made their request to *Mark* to leave them a written memorial of the doctrine they had received by word of mouth: That they did not desist from their entreaties, till they had prevailed upon him: That when the Apostle *Peter* knew what had been done, he was pleased with the zeal of the men, and (q) confirmed that writing by his authority, that it might be read in the churches. "This is related, says *Eusebe*, by *Clement* in the sixth book of his *Institutions*. And *Papias*, Bishop of *Hierapolis*, agrees with him."

From this passage of *Eusebe* it has been concluded by learned men, that *Papias* had related not only what we have before seen in the foregoing chapter from the Elder, but likewise that *Peter* had confirmed *Mark's*  
R 4 Gospel.

(p) *Hist. Ec. l. 2. c. 15.*

(q) — κυρῶσαι τε τὴν γραφὴν εἰς ἔντευξιν ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις  
... συνεπιμαρτυρεῖ δ' αὐτῷ καὶ ὁ ἱεραπολίτης ἐπίσκοπος ὁνομασ-  
ματι Παπίας.

A. D.  
116.

Gospel. So thought Mr. (r) Richardson, who has writ with so much judgement on the Canon of the New Testament. And we learn, says he, from Eusebe, that both Papias, and Clement of Alexandria attested, that the Romans having prevailed with St. Mark to write his Gospel, what he had done was revealed to St. Peter by the Holy Ghost, who thereupon authorized the work, and appointed it to be read publicly in the church.

But to this I crave leave to say two things.

First, that this same passage from Clement of Alexandria, is related by Eusebe in another (s) place differently, and I think in some respects more accurately than here. There Eusebe informs us, that Clement says, when Mark had composed his Gospel, he delivered it to them that had asked it of him. Which when (t) Peter knew, he neither forbid it, nor encouraged it. But of this I say no more here. When we come to Clement himself, we shall farther consider these two accounts of Eusebe: how they may be reconciled, and which is the most accurate.

Secondly,

(r) The Canon of the N. T. vindicated, p. 34. ed. third, 1619.

(s) H. Ec. L. vi. c. 14.

(t) Ὅπερ ἐπὶ γινόντα τὸν πέτρον, προτρέψικας μὴτε καλεῖσθαι, μὴτε προτρέφασθαι, p. 216. B.

*Secondly*, Which soever of these two accounts is the more accurate: supposing that *Clement* did write, that when *Peter* knew what was done, he confirmed the writing by his authority, that it might be read in the churches; yet it cannot be inferred from *Eusebe*, that *Papias* had said all this. *Eusebe* says: *And Papias, Bishop of Hierapolis, agrees with Clement.* Such observations as these are, in my opinion, to be interpreted cautiously. These words of *Eusebe* do not imply, that *Papias* had expressly related every thing there said by *Clement*: but only in general, that the two accounts of *St. Mark's Gospel* given by *Clement* and *Papias* are agreeable to each other. They agree in the author of that Gospel, that he was a disciple and companion of *St. Peter*, and that it was composed out of that Apostle's sermons. But because *Papias* is said, to agree with *Clement*, it is by no means necessarie to suppose, he had delivered every particular contained in that passage of *Clement*.

3. *Of the Acts of the Apostles.*

*Papias* does undoubtedly give some confirmation to the historie of the *Acts of the Apostles*, in what he says of *Philip*: and especially in what he says of *Iustus*, called *Barsa-*



*A. D.* *Barfabas.* But I think it cannot be affirmed, <sup>116.</sup> that he did particularly mention, or refer to, the book of the *Acts*. For I reckon, it is *Eusebe* himself, who adds that quotation out of the *Acts*, upon occasion of what *Papias* had writ of the before-mentioned *Barfabas*.

4. *Of the epistles of Peter and John.*

1.) *Papias* evidently confirms the genuinenesse and authority of the first epistle of *Peter*, and the first of *John*.

2.) *Papias* had writ nothing of the second epistle of *Peter*, or of the other epistles of *John*. If he had, *Eusebe* would certainly have taken notice of it. These epistles were doubted of, and contradicted by some in his time. He therefore diligently observed whatever he met with concerning them in ancient writers. And fails not of informing his readers of it.

3.) Nevertheless nothing can be inferred from the silence of *Papias* to the prejudice of the genuinenesse of these epistles. He nowhere designed to give a catalogue of the writings of these Apostles. All *Eusebe* says is, *Papias brought testimonies out of the first epistle of John, and the first of Peter likewise.* That he has alleged no passages out of the other, is not at all strange. *Papias* dealt chiefly

Chap.  
chiefly  
particul  
of thos  
fore wi

I thi  
pias ha  
And th  
of Iren  
I apprel  
cluded  
Johns,  
five boo  
was wri  
do not t  
ter, to  
Who w  
known  
particul  
And i  
of Cesar  
posed to  
in the p  
Revelatio  
thers, w

(\*) *Vid.*

chiefly in unwritten traditions. And had no particular occasion to quote any other epistles of those Apostles. He confirms these therefore without prejudicing the rest.

5. *Of the Revelation.*

I think it also highly probable, that Papias had read the book of the *Revelation*. And this may be confirmed from the passage of *Irenaeus*, where he mentions him. But I apprehend too, that it may be fairly concluded from what *Eusebe* says of the two *Johns*, that Papias had no where in these five books expressly said, that the *Revelation* was writ by *John* the Apostle. However, I do not take the silence of Papias in this matter, to be any objection to that supposition. Who was the author of that book, was well known in his time; but he might have no particular occasion to mention him.

And it is observable, that *Andrew*, Bishop of *Cesarea* in *Cappadocia*, who is (u) supposed to have flourished about the year 500, in the preface to his *Commentarie* upon the *Revelation* mentions Papias together with others, who had born testimonie to this book,

in

(\*) *Vid. Car. H. L. T. 13.*

A. D. in this manner: " But (x) we judge it  
 116. " needless, says *Andrew*, to enlarge on the  
 " divine inspiration of this book, to which  
 " so many blessed men bear a credible testi-  
 " monie: as *Gregorie* the divine, and *Cyril*,  
 " and others more ancient than they: I  
 " mean, *Papias*, *Irenaeus*, *Methodius*, and  
 " *Hippolytus*."

6. *Of the Gospel according to the Hebrews.*

*Papias* gives no confirmation to this Gospel. *Eusebe* says, he had a historie, which is contained in the Gospel according to the Hebrews. The words of *Eusebe* are remarkable. He does not say, that this story was taken out of that Gospel, or that *Papias* had quoted, or brought testimonies out of it. This Gospel seems to have contained several stories and relations, or circumstances of things, added to the Gospel of St. *Matthew*. It is not at all wonderful, that *Papias*, who collected unwritten traditions, should have one story, found, or contained, in the Gospel according to the Hebrews. When these additions were inserted

(x) Περὶ μέντοι τῆ θεοπνεύστῃς τῆς βίβλου περιττὸν μὴ κινῆσαι τὸν λόγον ἡγούμεθα, τῶν μακαρίων, γρηγορίου τῷ θεολόγῳ, ... προσέτι δὲ καὶ ἀρχαιοτέρων, παπῆς, εἰρηναίου, μεθοδίου, καὶ ἱππολύτου, ταύτῃ προσμαρτυρούντων τὸ ἀξιόπιστον. *Andr. Proleg. ad Apoc. p. 3. B. c. ad calcem. T. 8. Opp. S. Chryf. Ed. Morell.*

inserted in that Gospel, is uncertain: Possibly about the time of *Papias*, possibly after it. A. D.  
116. And if they were a little before, it is not very material. I conclude however, that *Papias* had no where quoted that Gospel. And I infer therefore likewise, that when *Papias* spoke of St. *Matthew's* Gospel, he spoke of his *Greek* Gospel, which he was well acquainted with. He had received some tradition by word of mouth, that it was written originally in *Hebrew*. But as for any *Hebrew* Gospel of *Matthew* in his time, he knew nothing of it, being a perfect stranger to that language.

It may be thought, that I have been too particular in my remarks upon *Papias*, a man of small capacity. But I esteem the testimony very valuable, which he has given to the Gospels of St. *Matthew* and St. *Mark*, and to the first epistle of St. *Peter*, and St. *John*. If *Papias* had been a wiser man, he had left us a confirmation of many more books of the New Testament.

*The sum of  
his testi-  
monie.*





C H A P. X.

JUSTIN MARTYR

- I. *His Historie.* II. *His Works, with extracts out of the Quaestiones et Responsiones ascribed to him.* III. *His Testimonie to the Scriptures of the New Testament, particularly the Gospels.* IV. *The Acts of the Apostles.* V. *St. Paul's Epistles.* VI. *The second Epistle of St. Peter.* VII. *The Revelation.* VIII. *Of Apocryphal Scriptures, supposed to be quoted by him.* IX. *The Sum of his Testimonie to the Scriptures of the New Testament.*

A. D. I. <sup>140.</sup> **T**HE historie of *Justin* may be collected partly from his own writings, partly from other ancient authors.

He was born (a) in *Flavia Neapolis*, anciently called *Sichem*, a city of *Samaria* in *Palestine*. His father's name was *Priscus*, his grandfather's *Bacchius*.

(a) *Apol. i. init. Paris. p. 55.*

Chap  
He  
ed phi  
under  
thagora  
princip  
all othe  
the Ch  
braced  
philosop  
ty he g  
Trypho  
himself  
The  
tain.  
bout th  
of muc  
was bo  
of age  
the reig  
of his  
digested  
the reig  
Rome,

(b) Ta  
p. 225. C  
(c) See  
thers, and  
(d) M  
Not. 1. Es  
(e) Hi

He

# Chap. X. JUSTIN MARTYR.

255

He was early a lover of truth, and studied philosophic under several masters: first under a *Stoic*, next a *Peripatetic*, then a *Pythagorean*, and lastly a *Platonic*: whose principles and sentiments he preferred above all other, until he became acquainted with the Christian religion: which he then embraced, as the *only* (b) *certain and useful philosophic*. Of his conversion to Christianity he gives an account in his Dialogue with *Trypho*. All these particulars we have from himself.

A. D.

140.

The exact time of his conversion is uncertain. *Cave* conjectures (c) it happened about the year 132, or 133. *Tillemont* (d) is of much the same opinion, who supposes, he was born in 103, and was about thirty years of age, when he embraced Christianity in the reign of *Adrian*, A. D. 133. The course of his life after his conversion is thus briefly digested by *Cave* (e). In the beginning of the reign of *Antonine the Pious* he came to *Rome*, and in the year 140 presented his first Apo-

(b) Ταύτην μόνην εὐρισκον φιλοσοφίαν ἀσφαλὴ τε καὶ σύμφερήν. p. 225. C. in *Dial*.

(c) See *Justin's life*, §. v. in *Lives of the Primitive Fathers*, and *Historia Liter.* p. 36.

(d) *Mem. Ecc. T. 2. Part ii. Vie de Justin M. Art. 2. Not. 1. & Art. v. Not. 4.*

(e) *Histor. Lit.*

A. D.

140.

Apologie to that Emperour. Afterwards he went into *Asia*, where he had the celebrated conference with *Trypho* the Jew. And then returned again to *Rome*, where he wrote his second Apologie, inscribed to *Marc Antonine the Philosopher*, and suffered martyrdom about the year 164. *Tillemont* (f) is rather inclined to place his death in the year 167, or 168. *Fabricius* (g) supposes, he was born in 89, and suffered martyrdom in the 74. year of his age, A. D. 163. *Grabe* (h) is also of the same opinion about the time of his birth, and that his martyrdom happened in the year 163, or 165, the 74. or 76. year of his age.

*Justin* is mentioned by many ancient Christian writers; by his disciple *Tatian*, by *Irenaeus* (i), *Tertullian* (k), *Methodius*, *Eusebe*, *Jerome*, *Epiphanius*, *Photius*, and others. I shall put down some of their testimonies.

*Tatian* (l) calls him an *admirable man*. *Methodius* (m) says, he was a man not far

remov-

(f) *Ubi supra* Art. 22.(g) *Biblioth. Gr. T. v. p. 51. 52.*(h) *Spicileg. Patrum. T. ii. p. 146. 147.*(i) *Adv. Haer. L. iv. cap. 6. et Lib. v. cap. 26.*(k) *Adv. Valent. cap. v. Justinus philosophus et martyr.*(l) *Ὁ δαυμασινώτατος Ἰουστίνος.* *Cont. Gr. p. 157. c.*(m) *Apud Phot. cod. 234. p. 921.*

remove

*Eusebe*

the time

" he w

philos

then ;

and o

little c

philos

For v

weigh

ments,

He adds

losoph

tions,

II. E

fore giv

*Marcion*,

gies, gi

ration c

*Justin*

very u

*Antonin*

Roman

a book

(n) H. E.

(p) Φιλοσ

(q) H. E.

(r) Cap.

removed from the Apostles in time, or virtue. *A. D.*  
*Eusebe (n)* says, he flourished not long after <sup>140.</sup>  
the times of the Apostles. *Photius (o)* says,  
“ he was well acquainted with the Christian  
philosophie, and especially with the Hea-  
then; rich in the knowledge of historie,  
and other parts of learning. But he took  
little care to set off the native beauty of  
philosophie with the ornaments of rhetoric.  
For which reason his discourses, though  
weighty and learned, want those allure-  
ments, which are apt to attract the vulgar.”  
He adds: “ He (*p*) shewed himself a Phi-  
losopher not only in words, but in his ac-  
tions, and his habit.”

II. *Eusebe*, beside the accounts he had be- *His Works.*  
fore given (*q*) of *Justin's* books against  
*Marcion*, and all Heresies, and his Apolo-  
gies, gives also (*r*) this distinct enume-  
ration of his works. “ He says, that  
*Justin* left behind him a great number of  
very useful works: As his Apologie to  
*Antonine the Pious*, and his sons, and the  
*Roman senate*, and another to his successor:  
a book against the *Greeks*, [or *Gentils*] an-  
S other

(n) *H. Ec. L. 2. c. 13.*

(o) *Cod. 125.*

(p) *Φιλοσοφῶν καὶ τοῖς λόγοις, καὶ τῷ βίῳ καὶ τῷ σχήματι, ibid.*

(q) *H. E. l. iv. cap. 11. 12. 16.*

(r) *Cap. 18.*



A. D.  
140.

other book against the *Gentils*, called *Elenchus*, [or a Confutation] another of the *Monarchie of God*: another, entitled *Psaltes*: of the *Soul*: a Dialogue against the *Jews*, which he had at *Ephesus* with *Trypho*. There are also, says *Eusebe*, many other books of his, which are in the hands of the brethren." *Jerome's* (s) account of *Justin's* works agrees with this of *Eusebe*.

The principal works of *Justin* are his two Apologies, and his Dialogue with *Trypho* the *Jew*, in two parts.

The first and larger Apologie was addressed, as has been already hinted, to *Titus Antonine the Pious*, *Marc Antonine*, and *Lucius Verus*, the Senate and People of Rome. (t) *Tillemont* and *Grabe* (u) think it was not presented to the Emperour before the year 150. *Cave* says in 140: *Pagi* (x), and *Basnage* (y) in the year 139. *Massuet* (z) about 145. The Benedictin editors of *Justin's* Works, in their Preface, support *Tillemont's* opinion in a very plausible manner.

The

(s) *De Vir. Ill. cap. 23.*

(t) *Vie de Justin, as above, Art. 13. & Note 3.*

(u) *Spicileg. sec. ii. p. 150.*

(x) *Crit. in Bar. A. D. 148. n. 5.*

(y) *Ann. P. E. 139. §. 5.*

(z) *Vid. Diff. i. in Irenae. num. ii. p. xv.*

Chap.

The

long af

nage,

and th

the year

The

presente

of his r

The

The be

ing: a

beginin

with T

Befid

Gentils

*Justin's*

tils, th

to the C

the Ele

The

of God,

ine wor

The

doubtfu

The

posed to

(a) *Ibid*

(b) *Vid*

The Dialogue with *Trypho* was writ not long after, and, according to *Pagi* and *Bafnage*, in 140. according to (a) *Massuet*, and the forementioned *Benedictins*, about the year 155.

The second Apologie seems to have been presented to *Marc Antonine* in the begining of his reign, in the year 162.

The larger Apologie is still extant entire. The begining of the second Apologie is wanting: as is the conclusion of the first, and begining of the second part of the Dialogue with *Trypho*.

Beside these there are two discourses to the Gentils, which are generally allowed to be *Justin's*: one called an Oration to the Gentils, the other *παράκλησις*, or an Exhortation to the Gentils, which is supposed (b) to be the *Elenchus*, mentioned by *Eusebe*.

The piece we now have of the *Monarchie of God*, seems to be a fragment of the genuine work of *Justin* with that title.

The epistle to *Zena* and *Serenus* is at best doubtful, and I think not *Justin's*.

The epistle to *Diognetus* is generally supposed to be *Justin's*, though it is doubted of

S 2

by

(a) *Ibid.*(b) *Vid. Grabe Spic. Patr. T. 2. p. 149.*

<sup>140.</sup> *A. D.* by some, because the stile is more elegant than that of his other pieces. For my own part, I cannot persuade myself to quote it as *Justin's*; since the stile is allowed to be superior to his, and there is no mention made of it by *Eusebe*, or *Jerome*. It would indeed be to my purpose, to suppose it genuine, because it has more references to *St. Paul's* epistles, than all the other works of *Justin*. But this is another exception, it not being very usual for *Justin* to express himself in the stile of the N. T. as this writer does. Nor can there be any particular reason for it in this epistle, writ to a Gentil, and not to a Christian. And how can one pretend to ascribe to any author a small piece, not mentioned among his works by the ancients, different from the ordinarie stile of all his other allowed pieces, when there is no character in the title or conclusion to determine whose it is? *Tillemont* (c) who is sensible, the stile is abundantly superior to *Justin's*, endeavors to prove it more ancient, and writ before the destruction of *Jerusalem*. Those arguments are fully confuted by (d) *Basnage*, who is willing

(c) Le stile si magnifique et si eloquent de cette lettre s'eleve beaucoup au dessus de celui de *St. Justin*. *Vie de Justin*. Art. 12. p. 371.

(d) *A. D.* 165. §. ix.

Chap  
willin  
Christ  
had su  
not be  
destroy  
at the  
in (e)  
been w  
think t  
Anony  
age can  
as such  
tracts o  
this wr  
Testam  
The  
doxos, a  
with J  
the mar  
It ma  
to take r  
fones, th  
author.  
Cave  
centurie.

(e) See D

(f) Vid.

Dodwell. D

(g) Bib.

I. ant  
wn  
t as  
pe-  
of  
be  
be-  
epi-  
But  
very  
stile  
can  
this  
arif-  
af-  
nen-  
dif-  
ther  
er in  
se it  
le is  
rs to  
the  
nents  
ho is  
lling  
  
lettre  
ie de

Chap. X. JUSTIN MARTYR.

261

willing to think the epistle genuine. The Christians, before the writing of this epistle, had suffered several persecutions : which could not be said of them, before *Jerusalem* was destroyed. It is an excellent epistle. And, as at the time of writing it, the Christians were in (e) a suffering condition, it must have been writ before the reign of *Constantin*. I think therefore, that the author of it is some Anonymous ancient Christian writer, whose age cannot be exactly settled. I shall quote him as such. And, after I have made my extracts out of *Justin*, shew what testimonie this writer bears to the books of the New Testament.

The *Quaestiones et Responsiones ad Orthodoxos*, and some other pieces, usually joined with *Justin's* works, are allowed to have the marks of a later time.

It may be not improper however, for me to take notice of those *Quaestiones et Responsiones*, the work of a learned and laborious author.

*Cave* (f) thinks him a writer of the fifth centurie. *Du Pin* (g) observes, that some

S 3

ascribe

(e) See *Du Pin. Bibl. Basnage* as above.

(f) *Vid. Cav Hist. Lit. in Justin. M. et Irenae. et Conf. Dodwell. Diff. Iren. iii. n. 22.*

(g) *Bib. Ecc. T. i. p. 58.*



<sup>140.</sup> A. D. ascribe it to *Theodore*: and he argues, that the writer lived in the fifth or sixth centurie. *Beausobre* thought, this (b) work to be rightly ascribed to *Diodore* of *Tarsus*. The *Benedictin* editors of *Justin Martyr* have examined this point with so much care, that their observations deserve to be briefly inserted here. They say, it (i) is needless to prove it, not to be a work of *Justin*, the thing is so evident. They think it probable, that the author was a *Syrian*. Which might lead us to *Theodore*. Nevertheless there are strong reasons against that supposition. In the end they conclude the author to have been a *Pelagian* of that countrey in the fifth centurie,

In this work most of the writers of the New Testament are quoted, and particularly the four Evangelists by name. In like manner the author quotes the (k) epistle to the *Hebrews*, and (l) the second epistle of *Peter*. He reckoned (m) both the genealogies

(b) *Hist. de Manich. T. i. p. 288. n. (1.)*

(i) *Admonit. in Q et R. p. 434. . . 437.*

(k) *Qu. 99. p. 480. D. E. et passim. Ed. Bened.*

(l) Καθὰ ὅσιν ὁ ἀπόστολος πέτρος ἐν τῇ δευτέρᾳ αὐτοῦ καθ' ἡμῶν ἐπιστολῇ. *Qu. 94. p. 478. c.*

(m) *Vid. Qu. 131. 132. 133. Et conf. Qu. 66. Vid. et Beauf. Hist. de Manich. T. i. p. 354. 355.*

to be J  
of his le  
the wri  
threw an  
account  
suppose  
likely,  
Physici  
Col. iv.

It is  
account  
not ext  
the los  
heresies  
first apo  
likewise  
chie of  
if he th  
the New  
The w  
Monarc  
only out  
of the C

III. Y

thod fro

(n) Εἰς πρ

γραμμένα

(o) "Ην

ὁ δὲ μακρὸν σ

to be *Joseph's*, one of his natural, the other of his legal father. And he says, that (n) both the writers of the genealogies, meaning *Matthew* and *Luke*, were *Hebrews*, and took their accounts from the public registers. As he supposed, *Luke* to have been a *Jew*, it is likely, that he did not think him to be the Physician mentioned by the Apostle *Paul*, *Col. iv. 14.*

A. D.  
140.

It is beside my design to give any farther account of those works of *Justin*, which are not extant: though every one must lament the losse of them: as his book against all heresies, which he particularly refers to in his first apologie: and his book against *Marcion*, and likewise that part of his book of the *Monarchie of God*, which is not extant; especially if he therein argued from the scriptures of the *New*, as well as of the *Old Testament*. The words of (o) *Eusebe* are, "Of the Monarchie of God, which he proved, not only out of our Scriptures, but also the books of the Gentils."

III. We are now to take a different method from what we have used with the

His Testi-  
monie to  
the N. T.

S 4

Stolical

(n) Εβραῖοι γὰρ ἦσαν ἐξ ἑβραίων, οἱ τὰς γενεαλογίας συγ-  
γραψάμενοι εὐαγγελισαί. *Qu. 133. p. 491. E.*

(o) Ἦν ἡ μόνον ἐκ τῶν παρ' ἡμῖν γραφῶν, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐκ τῶν  
ἑλληνικῶν συνίστησι βεβλήτων. *H. E. p. 140. A.*

*A. D.* *Stolical* Fathers. For it is impossible to transcribe all the places of *Justin*, in which he has quoted the Gospels, in his Apologies and Dialogue, though alwaies without expressly mentioning the names of the *Evangelists*. I shall endeavor to take passages enough, to shew his manner of quoting.

*Quotations and Allusions.*

*Gospels.*

1. " At (*p*) the same time an angel was sent to the same virgin, saying: *Behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb by the Holy Ghost, and thou shalt bring forth a son, and he shall be called the Son of the Higbest. And thou shalt call his name Jesus, for he shall save his people from their sins: As they have taught, who have writ the historie of all things concerning our Saviour Jesus Christ. And we believe them.*" *Matth. i. 20. 21. Comp. Luke i. 31.* Thus he writes in his first Apologie.

2. Again, in the same Apologie: " But lest (*q*) we should seem to deceive you, it may be fit to lay before you some of the doctrines of Christ. His words were short and concise. For he was no sophist, but his word was the power of God. Of chastity

he

(*p*) *Apol. i. p. 75. B. Paris. 1636.*

(*q*) *P. 61. E.*

‘ he spoke in this manner : *Whofoever looketh* *A. D.*  
‘ *on a woman to luft after her, has committed* *140.*  
‘ *adulterie with her already in his heart, in*  
‘ *the fight of God. And, if thy right eye of-*  
‘ *fend thee, pluck it out. For it is better for*  
‘ *thee to enter into the kingdom of heaven with*  
‘ *one eye, than having two eyes to be caft into*  
‘ *eternal fire. And he who marries her who*  
‘ *is divorced from another man committeth a-*  
‘ *dulterie.”* Matth. v. 28. 29. 32.

3. In his Dialogue. “ And it is (r) *Matth.*  
‘ *writen in the Gospel, that he said: All*  
‘ *things are delivered to me of the Father.*  
‘ *And no man knoweth the Father, but the*  
‘ *Son; neither the Son, save the Father, and*  
‘ *they to whom the Son will reveal him.”*  
Matth. xi. 27.

4. “ And (s) the virgin *Mary* having been  
‘ *filled with faith and joy, when the angel*  
‘ *Gabriel brought her good tidings, that the*  
‘ *Spirit of the Lord should come upon her,*  
‘ *and the power of the Higheft overshadow*  
‘ *her, and therefore that holy thing born of*  
‘ *her should be the Son of God, answered: Be*  
‘ *it unto me according to thy word,”* Luke i.  
35. 38.

5. It

(r) Καὶ ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ δὲ γέγραπται εἰπών. 326. D.

(s) Dial. Par. ii. p. 327. C.



A. D.

140.

Matth.

Mark.

Luke.

5. It is undoubted, that the Gospels of *Matthew* and *Luke* are chiefly quoted by him, and *Mark's* but seldom. However, I shall take a part of a passage, in which, within the compass of half a page, these three Gospels are quoted.

*Matthew*  
xxv. 41.

“ And in (t) other words he says, *Depart from me into outer darknesse, which the Father has prepared for Satan and his angels.*

*Luke* x. 19.

“ And again he said in other words: *I give unto you power to tread upon serpents, and scorpions, and venomous (u) beasts, and upon all the power of the enemy.*—And be-

*Mark* viii.  
31.

fore he was crucified, he said: *The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the Scribes and Pharisees, and be (x) crucified, and rise again the third day.*”

These last words are exactly quoted by *Justin* again (y) in another place. In *St. Luke* ix. 22. is a text very resembling: but in this place *Justin* appears to have used *St. Mark*. In *St. Luke* it is,—and (z) *be slain, and raised the third day.*

6. That

(t) P. 301. D.

(u) Καὶ σκολοπενδρῶν.

(x) Καὶ σταυρωθῆναι, καὶ τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ ἀναστῆναι.

(y) p. 327. A.

(z) Καὶ ἀποκτανθῆναι καὶ τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ ἐγερθῆναι.

6.

might

the W

Howe

quota

7.

after

Son,

ner

shal

8.

(b)

who

the

mig

not

11.

9.

Unl

into

nife

who

wor

10.

me,

that

(a)

(c)

6. That *Justin* had read St. *John's* Gospel, *A. D.*  
might be concluded from his calling *Christ* <sup>140.</sup>  
the *Word*, and the word and reason of God. *John.*  
However it will not be amiss to observe a  
quotation, or a reference or two.

7. " But (a) he is the first power next *John i.*  
' after God the Father and Lord of all, and <sup>14.</sup>  
' Son, and the Word. And in what man-  
' ner being made flesh he became man, I  
' shall shew hereafter."

8. Speaking of *John the Baptist*: " They *John i.*  
' (b) suspected him to be the Christ, to <sup>20. 23. 27.</sup>  
' whom he said: *I am not the Christ, but*  
' *the voice of one crying, There will come one*  
' *mightier than me, whose shoes latches I am*  
' *not worthy to bear.*" Compare *Matth. iii.*

11. *Luke iii. 16.*

9. " For (c) Christ himself has said: *John iii.*  
' Unless ye are born again, ye shall not enter <sup>3. 4. 5.</sup>  
' into the kingdom of heaven. But it is ma-  
' nifest to all, that it is impossible, for those  
' who have been once born to enter into the  
' wombs of them that bare them."

10. " For thus he (d) said: *He that hears John xiv.*  
' me, and does the things I say, he hears him <sup>24.</sup>  
' that sent me."

II. *Justin*

(a) *Apol. i. p. 74. B.*

(c) *Apol. p. 94. A.*

(b) *Dial. p. 316. C.*

(d) *p. 64. A.*

A. D.  
140.  
Christ's  
Memoirs.

11. Justin often speaks of the Gospels under the title of *Memoirs*, or (e) *Commentaries*; *Commentaries* (f) of the *Apostles*: His, (g) or *Christ's Memoirs*; *Memoirs of the Apostles and their companions*; and we have before seen him use the word *Gospel*, as he does also *Gospels*.

12. Speaking of the Eucharist: "For the (h) Apostles in the memoirs composed by them, which are called Gospels, have thus delivered it, that Jesus commanded them to *take bread, and give thanks*." Matth. xxvi. 26. Mark xiv. 22. Luke xxii. 19. 20.

13. "For (i) in the commentaries, which, as I have said, were composed by the Apostles, and their followers, [or *companions*] it is writ: That his *sweat fell like drops of blood*, as he prayed, saying: *If it be possible, let this cup pass from me*."

There can be no doubt, but he here intends

(e) Ὡς ἀπὸ τῶν ἀπομνημονευμάτων ἐμάθομεν. p. 332. C.  
(f) Ὅπερ ἐν τοῖς ἀπομνημονεύμασι τῶν ἀποστόλων αὐτῶν γέγραπται. 332. B. et alibi.

(g) Ἐν τοῖς ἀπομνημονεύμασιν αὐτῶν. p. 333. D.

(h) Ap. i. p. 98. B. Ἄ καλεῖται εὐαγγέλιον.

(i) Ἐν γὰρ τοῖς ἀπομνημονεύμασιν, ἃ φημι ὑπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων αὐτῶν καὶ τῶν ἐκείνοις παρακολυθησάντων συντετάχθαι, ὅτι ἰσράης, κ. λ. p. 331. C. D.

Cha  
tends  
xxvi.

14  
plain  
high  
two o  
by cor  
of Je  
Luke,

15  
read i  
Lord's  
purpo  
an acc  
Emper  
"The  
"the  
"cord  
"Reac  
"disco  
"exce

16  
"says  
"prece

(k) Κα  
ματα τῶν  
σαμένε το  
(l) Ἐν  
τυχῶν αὐ

tends particularly *Luke* xx. 44. and *Matth.* xxvi. 39.

A. D.  
140.

14. And upon the whole, it must be plain to all, that he owned, and had the highest respect for the four Gospels; written, two of them by Apostles, and the other two by companions and followers of the Apostles of Jesus Christ; that is, by *Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John.*

15. Farther, these Gospels were publicly read in the assemblies of the Christians every

*The Gospels read publicly.*

*Lord's day*, by a person appointed for that purpose, whom he calls *Reader*. For giving an account of the Christian worship to the Emperour in the first Apologie, he says: "The (k) memoirs of the Apostles, or the writings of the prophets, are read, according as the time allows, and when the Reader has ended, the President makes a discourse, exhorting to the imitation of so excellent things."

16. "Trypho the Jew in the Dialogue says (l) to Justin: I am sensible, that the precepts in your Gospel, as it is called, are so

(k) Καὶ τὰ ἀπομνημονεύματα τῶν ἀποστόλων, ἢ τὰ συγγράμματα τῶν προφητῶν ἀναγινώσκεται μέχρις ἐσχάρει εἶτα πανταμένον τοῦ ἀναγινώσκοντος, κ. λ. p. 98. D.

(l) Ἐν τῷ λεγομένῳ εὐαγγελίῳ . . . ἐμοὶ γὰρ ἐμέλησεν ἐντυχῆν αὐτοῖς. p. 227. C.



A. D. ' so great and wonderful, that I think it  
 140. ' impossible for any man to keep them.  
 ' For I have been at the pains to read  
 ' them."

Whether the Dialogue be real, or only a fictitious discourse, this is a proof, the Gospels were open to all, and were well known in the world. For it is reasonable to suppose, that *Justin* chose to write in character.

IV. Let us in the next place observe some references to the Acts of the Apostles.

N. T.

*Justin.*

*Aas.*

1. Acts vii. 22.

*And (m) Moses was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians.*

2. Acts xiii. 27.

*But they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew (o) him not, nor yet the voices of the*

1. Moses was (n)

thought worthie to partake of all the learning of the Egyptians. &c.

2. For the Jews

who had the prophecies, and alwaies expected the coming of Christ, knew him not (p), and not only so  
*prophets*

(m) Καὶ ἐπαίδευσεν πᾶση σοφίᾳ Αἰγυπτίων.

(o) Τοῦτον ἀγνοήσαντες, κ.  
 λ.

(n) Ἀλλὰ, καὶ πάσης τῆς Αἰγυπτίων παιδείας μετέχειν ἠξιώθη. ad Graec. cohort. p. 11. B.

(p) Ἠγρόνησαν. Ap. i. p. 85. A.

Cha  
 proph  
 every  
 have  
 conde

I th  
 to the  
 from v

3. A  
 23. S  
 ther thi  
 which  
 and M  
 should c  
 Christ  
 and thau  
 the first

(q) Εἰ  
 λ.

*prophets which are read every sabbath day, they have fulfilled them in condemning him.*

but killed him. But <sup>A. D. 140.</sup> the Gentils, who had never heard of Christ, untill the Apostles seting out from Jerusalem taught them the things concerning him,—being filled with joy and faith, —gave themselves up to the unbegotten God through Jesus Christ.

I think it plain, there is here a reference to the historie in the *Acts*. See Ch. xiii. from ver. 44. to the end.

N. T.

*Justin.*

3. Acts xxvi. 22. 23. *Saying none other things, than those which the prophets and Moses did say should come: That (q) Christ should suffer, and that he should be the first that should*

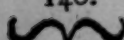
3. For though it had been obscurely declared by the prophets, that (r) *Christ should suffer*, and after that be Lord of all, &c.

*rise*

(q) Εἰ πάντες ὁ Χριστός, &c. λ.

(r) Πάντες μενομένην ὁ Χριστός, *Dial. p. 30. A.*

A. D. rise from the dead.

140.  
 &c.

V. We will now proceed to St. Paul's epistles.

N. T.

Justin.

Romans.

I. Rom. ii. 4. Or despisest thou (s) the riches of his goodnesse, and forbearance and long suffering, not knowing, that the goodnesse of God leadeth thee to repentance?

I. For (t) the goodnesse and kindnesse of God, and the immensity of his riches, esteems, as Ezekiel declares, him that repents of his sins, as one who is righteous, and has not sinned. See *Ezek. xxxiii. 15. 16.*

The first words have a great resemblance with Paul's, Rom. ii. 4. Dr. Thirlby in his notes refers also to Rom. xi. 33. Eph. ii. 7. iii. 8.

2. "Nor was Abraham declared righteous by God because of circumcision, but because of faith. For before that he was circumcised, it was said of him: Abra-

(s) Ἡ τοῦ πλάτῃ τῆς χρηστότητος αὐτοῦ — καταφρο-  
 νή — ;

(t) Ἡ γὰρ χρηστότης, καὶ ἡ  
 φιλανθρωπία τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ τὸ  
 ἄμετρον τοῦ πλάτῃ αὐτοῦ.  
*Dial. p. 266. D.*

Chap

'ham

'him

'fore

'flesh

'havin

'them

'hope

'to C

resemb

first w

For

p. 257

while t

3.

For (u

our pay

ficed for

4. I

19. —

that th

sions am

partly b

'ham

(u) Καὶ

ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν

(y) Ἀλλὰ

ὑπάρχειν.

αἰρέσεις ἐν

'ham believed God, and it was imputed to *A. D.*  
'him for righteousness. [Gen. xv. 6.] Where- *140.*  
'fore we also in the circumcision of our  
'flesh believing in God through Christ, and  
'having the circumcision which is useful to  
'them that have it, that is, of the heart,  
'hope to appear righteous, and acceptable  
'to God." In these last words is a great  
resemblance with *Rom. ii. 28. 29.* as in the  
first with *Paul's* argument *Rom. iv. Gal. iii.*

For *Rom. xi. 2. 3. 4.* may be seen *Dialog.*  
*p. 257. D.* But I do not think it worth  
while to insert the passage here.

N. T. *Justin.*

3. *1 Cor. v. 7.* 3. For Christ (x) *1 Corinth*  
For (u) even Christ was the passover, who  
our passover is sacri- was afterwards sacri-  
ficed for us. ficed for us.

4. *1 Cor. xi. 18.* 4. For he said . . .  
19. — I (y) bear (z) And, There shall  
that there are divi- be schisms and heresies.  
sions among you, and I  
partly believe it. For

T there

(u) Καὶ γὰρ τὸ πάχα ἡμῶν  
ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν ἐθύθη, Χριστός.  
(y) Ἀκούω, χρίσματα ἐν ὑμῖν  
ὑπάρχειν. . . . Δεῖ γὰρ καὶ  
αἱρέσεις ἐν ὑμῖν εἶναι.  
(x) Ἦν γὰρ τὸ πάχα ὁ  
Χριστός, ὁ τυθείς ὑσέρον. *Dial.*  
*p. 338. C.*  
(z) Καὶ, ἔσονται χρίσματα  
καὶ αἱρέσεις. *p. 253. B.*



A. D. there must be also here-  
 140. *fies among you.*

5. I Cor. xii. 8.

9. 10. *For to one is given by the spirit the word of wisdom, to another the word of knowledge by the same spirit. To another faith by the same spirit: to another the gifts of knowledge by the same spirit: to another the working of miracles, to another prophetic, to another discerning of spirits.*

6. I Cor. xv. 12. *How (b) say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?*

Galat.

7. Gal. iv. 12. *Brethren, I beseech*

(b) Πῶς λέγουσιν τινες ἐν ὑμῖν, ὅτι ἀνάστασις νεκρῶν οὐκ ἔστιν.

5. One (a) receives the spirit of understanding, another of counsel, another of power, [or miracles] another of healing, another of fore-knowledge, another of doctrine, another of the fear of God.

6. Who also say (c) that there is no resurrection of the dead.

7. In his Oration to the Greeks: *Be you*

(a) Dial. p. 258. A.

(c) Οἱ καὶ λέγουσι μὴ εἶναι νεκρῶν ἀνάστασιν. Dial. p. 307. A.

(d) you for I a

8. the M dible t niously in the ed." is also wards the epi nifest.

9. And a the for Apostle Jesus self be corner,

He lxviii.

(d) T καὶ γὰρ ὡς (f) P (b) αὐτοῦ Ἰν

(k) p.

(d) you, be as I am : (e) as I am, for I al- A. D.  
for I am as ye are. so was as you are. 140.

8. The Jew in the Dialogue allows, that the *Messiah* might suffer : but it seems incredible to him, that he should be so ignominiously (f) crucified, " For, says he, we read in the law, that he who is crucified is accursed." Referring to *Deut.* xxi. 23. Which is also observed *Gal.* iii. 13. *Justin* afterwards (g) answers this, but his respect to the epistle to the *Galatians* is not very manifest.

N. T.

*Justin.*

9. Eph. ii. 20.  
*And are built upon the foundation of the Apostles and prophets, Jesus (b) Christ himself being the chief corner stone.*

9. But our cir- *Ephes.*  
cumcision manifested next after yours has been (i) made by sharp stones, that is, by the words of the *Apostles of the chief corner stone.*

He (k) argues from the words of *Pf.* lxviii. 18. which are quoted *Eph.* iv. 8.

T 2

but

(d) Γίνεσθε ὡς ἐγώ, ὅτι καὶ γὰρ ὡς ὑμεῖς.

(f) p. 317. A.

(b) Οὐτὸς ἀκρογωνιαίος τοῦ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ.

(k) p. 258. B.

(e) Γένεσθε ὡς ἐγώ; ὅτι καὶ γὰρ ἡμεῖς ὡς ὑμεῖς. p. 40. D.

(g) p. 322. 323.

(i) Διὰ λίθων ἀκροτόμων, ταῖς διὰ τῶν λόγων τῶν διὰ τῶν ἀποστόλων τοῦ ἀκρογωνιαίου λίθου. p. 342. A.

A. D. but his reference to that epistle is not very  
 140. clear.

N. T.

Justin.

Philip.

10. Philip. iv. 8.

*Whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, — just, — pure, — lovely, — think of these things.*

Coloss.

11. Col. i. 15.

*Who (m) is the first born of every creature.*

2 Theff.

12. 2 Theff. ii. 3.

*4. For that day shall not come, except there*

10. Justin says (l),

that in the law of Moses are enacted those things that are by nature good, pious, and just.

11. Justin says:

Christ is (n) the first born of all things made. Again, (o) The first born of every creature. Once more (p) The first born of God, and before all the creatures.

12. Justin speak-

ing of Christ's second coming, says, " He be

(m) Πρωτότοκον πάσης κτίσεως.

(l) Dial. p. 263. D.

(n) Πρωτότοκον τῶν πάντων ποιημάτων, 310. B.

(o) Πρωτότοκον πάσης κτίσεως, p. 311. B.

(p) Πρωτότοκον τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ πρὸ πάντων τῶν κτισμάτων, p. 326. D.

Chap

be (q)  
first,  
sin be  
son of  
opposed  
himself  
is calle  
is wor

13.

And b  
fect,  
author  
vation  
that o  
of Goa  
after t  
cbifede  
Made  
for ev  
der  
See Ch  
cx. 4.

14.

(q) "Ο  
τασία π  
αὐθραπ  
(r) p.  
(s) Ka  
λὼντα γ

be (q) a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition, who opposeth, and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshiped.

shall appear from heaven in glorie, when also (r) the man of apostasie, who speaking great things against the most High, shall vex us Christians."

A. D.  
140.

13. Hebr. v. 9. 10. And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him. Called of God an high-priest after the order of Melchisedec. Ch. vi. 20. Made an high-priest for ever, after the order of Melchisedec. See Ch. vii. 11. Ps. cx. 4.

13. This is he (s) *Hebrews.* who after the order of Melchisedec is king of Salem, and eternal priest of the most High." He calls Christ (t) elsewhere also God's eternal Priest and King. See hereafter Numb. VII.

14. In another Place Justin says of Christ, *Hebrews.*  
T 3 the

(q) "Οτι εαν μη ελθῃ αποστασία πρῶτον, καὶ ἀποκαλυφθῇ ὁ ἄνθρωπος τῆς ἀμαρτίας, κ. λ.

(r) "Οταν καὶ ὁ τῆς ἀποστασίας ἄνθρωπος, κ. λ. p. 336. D.

(s) p. 341. in.

(t) Καὶ αἰώνιον τοῦ Θεοῦ ἱερέα, καὶ βασιλέα, καὶ Χριστὸν μέγα μετα γίνεσθαι, p. 323. C.



A. D.

140.

}

the *Word*, and *Son of God*: "That (u) he  
" is also called both *Angel* and *Apostle*." As  
Christ is no where in the scriptures of the  
Old or New Testament called *Apostle*, ex-  
cept in *Hebr.* iii. 3. *Grabe* thinks, it (x)  
may be hence not unfairly collected, that  
*Justin* knew, and approved of that epistle.

2 Peter,

VI. 2 Pet. iii. 8. VI. We have also  
But beloved, be not (y)understood, that the  
ignorant of this one saying, that a day of  
thing, that one day is the Lord is as a thou-  
with the Lord as a sand years, belongs to  
thousand years, and this matter.  
a thousand years as  
one day. See Pf. cx.

4.

Revela-  
tion.

VII. "And (z) a man from among us,  
" by name *John*, one of the (a) *Apostles* of  
" Christ, in the *Revelation* made to him,  
" has

(u) Καὶ ἄγγελος δὲ καλεῖται, καὶ ἀπόστολος. *Ap.* i. p. 95.  
D.

(x) *Vid. ejusd. annot. ad Justin Loc. ed. Oxon. 8vo. cap.*  
82. p. 121.

(y) Συνήκαμεν καὶ τὸ εἰρημένον, ὅτι ἡμέρα κυρίου ὡς χίλια ἔτη,  
εἰς τὸτο συνάγει, p. 308. A.

(z) Καὶ ἐπεὶ δὴ καὶ παρ' ἡμῶν ἀνὴρ τις ᾧ ὄνομα Ἰωάννης, εἰς  
τῶν ἀποστόλων τοῦ Χριστοῦ, ἐν ἀποκαλύψει γενομένη αὐτῷ, κ.  
λ. p. 308. A.

(a) *Eusebe* may be supposed to refer to this very passage,  
when in his account of *Justin's* works he observes: Μέμνη-  
ται δὲ καὶ τῆς Ἰωάννου ἀποκαλύψεως, σαφὲς τὸ ἀποστόλου αὐτῇ  
εἶναι λέγων. *Hist. Ec.* l. 4. c. 18. p. 140. D.

' has

' Chri

' salen

' and

' judg

' vel.

' our

' mar

' be eq

' dren

' surre

It d

ther th

judgem

of res

judgem

St.

and Ir

ries up

misfunc

that th

marks

any Co

been

shewn

(b) Scr

Justinus

‘ has prophesied, that the believers in our <sup>A. D.</sup>  
 ‘ Christ shall live a thousand years in Jeru- <sup>140.</sup>  
 ‘ salem, and after that shall be the general,  
 ‘ and in a word, the eternal resurrection and  
 ‘ judgement of all men together. [See Re-  
 ‘ vel. ch. xx.] The same thing, which also  
 ‘ our Lord has said: *That they shall neither*  
 ‘ *marry, nor be given in marriage, but shall*  
 ‘ *be equal to the angels, and shall be the chil-*  
 ‘ *dren of God, being [the children] of the re-*  
 ‘ *surrection.*” Luke xx. 35. 36.

It deserves to be considered likewise, whe-  
 ther the expression of *eternal resurrection and*  
*judgement* do not allude to Heb. vi. 2. *And*  
*of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal*  
*judgement.*

St. Jerome (b) seems to say, that Justin  
 and Irenaeus explained, or wrote commenta-  
 ries upon, *the Revelation*. But perhaps we  
 misunderstand him. He may only mean,  
 that they had quoted it, and made some re-  
 marks upon it in their works. If he intends  
 any Commentarie of theirs, he must have  
 been mistaken. Divers learned men have  
 shewn there is no ground to think, that ei-

T 4

ther

(b) Scripsit [Joannes] Apocalypsim, quam interpretantur  
 Justinus Martyr et Irenaeus. *De Vir. Ill. Joannes, c. ix.*

*A. D.* ther of those Fathers wrote any Commenta-  
 140. rie upon that book. I shall place in the mar-  
 gin a note of (c) *Fabricius*. *Huet* (d) also  
 writes to the same purpose.

*Of Apo-  
 cryphal  
 Scriptures.*

VIII. Thus far of quotations or allusions  
 of *Justin Martyr* to our books of the New  
 Testament, commonly received. There is  
 likewise a passage or two, in which some  
 have supposed him to refer to *Apocryphal*  
 writings.

*Of Apo-  
 cryphal  
 Gospels.*

I. In his Dialogue with *Trypho* he says:  
 “ Wherefore (e) also our Lord Jesus Christ  
 “ has said: In whatsoever [*things*, or *actions*,  
 “ or *ways*] I shall find you, in the same I  
 “ will also judge you.”

I think I need not stay long upon this pas-  
 sage. Possibly, *Justin* designed not to quote  
 any

(c) Hieronymus in chronico: *Sub eo [Domitiano] Apostolus  
 Joannes in Patrum insulam relegatus Apocalypsim vidit, quam  
 Irenaeus interpretatur. In Graeco Eusebii est, ὡς ὁ ἀπὸς Εἰρη-  
 ναῖος. Itaque nec de Justiniani nec Irenaei commentario in  
 Apocalypsin cogitandum, quem nec Hieronymus infra ubi  
 horum scripta persequitur, neque alius quisquam veterum me-  
 morat. Saltem illud interpretatur, sive ut Graecus interpres,  
 μετέφρασεν, non potest nisi de illis locis scriptorum Justiniani  
 M. et Irenaei intelligi, in quibus Apocalypseos Joannis men-  
 tionem faciunt, vel verba quaedam illius explicant. Vide  
 Tillemontium Tom. I. Mem. Ec. p. 637. [St. Jean l'Evan-  
 geliste Note x.] et spicilegium patrum J. E. Grabe. T. II.  
 p. 170. Fabric. ad loc. Hieron. de Vir. Ill.*

(d) *Demonst. E. Propos. i. §. 9.*

(e) Διὸ καὶ ὁ ἡμετέρος Κύριος Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς εἶπεν. Ἐν οἷς αὐ-  
 τῶν καταλάβω, ἐν τέτοις καὶ κρινῶ. *Apol. p. 267. A.*

Char

any to  
 of ou  
 served  
 many  
 only  
 and t  
 in E  
 to the  
 xxiv.

but ju  
*Jones*  
 ly, th  
 ignora  
 Christ  
 Jesus

2.  
*Justin*  
 “ can  
 “ wa

(f) C  
 ab autor  
 sed potiu  
 quo excu  
 cet non e  
 nisi Just  
 verba ill  
 scriptoril  
 esse in  
 p. 333.

(g) M  
 (h) K  
 ἔνθα ὁ

any text, but to represent the sense of many of our Lord's sayings. *Fabricius* (*f*) has observed, that this saying has been quoted by many writers, and that *Justin* is the only one who ascribes it to our Lord: and that there are words resembling these in *Ezekiel*: *I will judge them according to their ways.* Ez. viii. 3. 8. and xviii. 30. xxiv. 14. xxxiii. 20. Moreover *Justin* had but just before expressly quoted *Ezekiel*. Mr. *Jones* (*g*) conjectures, that *Justin* wrote only, the *Lord hath said*: and that some scribe, ignorantly imagining these to be the words of Christ, inserted in his copie the words our, and Jesus Christ.

2. In another place in the same Dialogue *Justin* (*h*) says: " And then when Jesus " came to the river *Jordan*, where *John* " was baptising, as Jesus descended into the " water,

(*f*) Coeterum non putem Apocryphum *Ezekielis* librum ab autore vitae *Antonii*, vel *Joh. Climacho* inspectum esse; sed potius ex Prophetia *Ezekielis*, qualis hodie extat ab aliquo exculptam, et deinde pluribus repetentibus invaluisse, licet non eadem plane verba apud *Ezechielem* leguntur. Deinde, nisi *Justinum* M. memoria lapsum dicere velimus, qui solus verba illa *Christo* tribuit, et plus simplici vice in allegandis scriptoribus hallucinatus est, probabile sane fuerit ab eo lecta esse in Apocrypho aliquo Evangelio. *Cod. Apocr. N. T.* p. 333.

(*g*) *New and full Method*, V. i. p. 539.

(*h*) Καὶ τότε ἐλθόντῳ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ ἐπὶ τὸν Ἰορδάνην ποταμὸν, ἦν δα ὁ Ἰωάννης ἐβάπτιζε, κατελθόντῳ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ ἐπὶ τὸ ὕδωρ,



A. D.  
140.

“ water, a fire also was kindled in *Jordan*:  
“ and when he came up out of the water,  
“ the Apostles of this our Christ have writ,  
“ that the Holy Ghost lighted upon him as  
“ a dove.”

Somewhat like this there was in the Gospel made use of by the *Nazarenes*, or *Ebionites*. *Epiphanius* (i), in his account of the *Ebionites*, says, that in their Gospel it is writen, “ that when *Jesus* came up out of  
“ the water, the heavens were opened, and  
“ he saw the Holy Spirit of God in the shape  
“ of a dove descending and entring into him-  
“ self. And there was a voice out of hea-  
“ ven, saying: *Thou art my beloved Son, in*  
“ *thee I am well-pleased*. And again: *I have*  
“ *this day begoten thee*. And (k) immediatly  
“ a great light shone round about the place.”

*Ittigius* (l) observes, that the accounts given of our Lord's baptism by *Justin* and the *Nazarene* Gospel are different, and concludes therefore, that *Justin* did not take his account from thence. It is plain, I think, they

ὕδαρ, καὶ πῦρ ἀνέφθη ἐν τῷ Ἰορδάνῃ καὶ ἀναδύνηται αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τοῦ ὕδατος, ὡς περιεράν τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμα ἐπιπτῆναι ἐπ' αὐτόν, ἔγραψαν οἱ ἀπόστολοι αὐτοῦ τέτα τοῦ Χριστοῦ ἡμῶν. *Dial. log. Part. 2. p. 315. D.*

(i) *Haer.* 30. §. 13.

(k) Καὶ εὐθὺς πρίελαμψεν τὸν τόπον ὥς μέγας.

(l) *Appendix ad Diff. de Haeres.* p. 24.

Chap  
they  
scende  
kindle  
that  
was co  
voice  
served  
of a  
a great  
the pl  
Gra  
think,  
not say  
of this  
up out  
upon  
of the  
only a  
traditio  
sion fr  
the bea  
lar exp

(m) A  
(n) Ve  
studio, in  
rem prop  
Johanne  
de igne sp  
infinitivo  
quae mod  
exemplar

they differ, in that *Justin* says, as *Jesus descended into the water*, there was a great light kindled in *Jordan*: Whereas, according to that Gospel, the light appeared, after *Jesus* was come up out of the water, and after the voice from heaven. Mr. *Jones* (m) has observed another disagreement. The one speaks of a fire kindled in the river: the other of a great light encircling, or shining round all the place.

A. D.  
140.

*Grabe* (n) has an observation, which, I think, is not contemptible: that *Justin* does not say, the Apostles have related any thing of this fire, but only, That when he came up out of the water, the Holy Ghost lighted upon him as a dove. This account therefore of the fire in the river of *Jordan* seems to be only a storie, which *Justin* had received by tradition. And perhaps it is only a conclusion from those words in our Gospels, that the heavens were opened to him, or a particular explication of them.

But

(m) As before V. i. p. 542.

(n) Verum *Justinus* ipsa verborum constructione, quasi studio, indicasse videtur, verba, scripserunt Apostoli, posteriorem propositionem de columbae descensu, quem *Matthaeus* et *Johannes* Apostoli memoriae prodiderunt, non item priorem de igne splendente, spectare, siquidem illa solum in modo infinitivo expressa ad τὸ scripserunt relationem habet, non prior, quae modo indicativo posita est, ideoque merito in impressis exemplaribus per Colon distincta. *Spicil. T. I. p. 19. 20.*

A. D.

140.

But I think, we need not any farther concern ourselves with these passages. It is plain from his numerous quotations, that our Gospels are the books *Justin* made use of, as authentic histories of Jesus Christ.

*The sum of  
Justin's  
testimonie.*

IX. It is time, we sum up the evidence of this writer. He has numerous quotations of our Gospels, except that of St. *Mark*, which he has seldom quoted. He quotes them, as containing authentic accounts of Jesus Christ, and his doctrine. He speaks of *memoirs*, or records, writ by *Apostles*, and *their companions*; plainly meaning the Apostles and Evangelists, *Matthew* and *John*; and by companions, or disciples of Apostles, *Mark* and *Luke*. These Gospels were read and expounded in the solemn assemblies of the Christians, as the books of the Old Testament were: and as they had been before in the *Jewish* synagogues. Whether any other books of the New Testament were so read, he does not inform us. This reading of the Gospels he mentions in his first Apologie to *Antonine* the *Pious*. He must have been well assured of the truth of what he says. And it is likely, knew it to be the ordinarie custom of the Christian churches he had visited in his travels. If it had

Chap

had n  
tained  
spoken  
some  
were  
*moirs*  
quiry  
he had  
a desig  
the R  
fair in  
duct  
cernin  
est inf  
Gospel  
time,  
after,  
well k  
also th  
These  
appeals  
and the  
by *Jer*  
The  
relate t  
to the  
the epi  
*lippians*

had not been a general practise, or had obtained in some few places only; he must have spoken more cautiously, and made use of some limitations and exceptions. For if there were Christian churches, in which the *memoirs* he speaks of were not read; upon enquiry made by the Emperour or his order, he had run the hazard of being convicted of a design to impose upon all the Majesty of the Roman Empire: and that, not in an affair incidentally mentioned, but in the conduct and worship of his own people, concerning whom he professeth to give the justest information. The general reading of the Gospels, as a part of divine worship, at that time, about the year 140, or not very long after, is not only a proof, that they were well known, and allowed to be genuine, but also that they were in the highest esteem. These Gospels were not concealed. *Justin* appeals to them in the most public manner, and they were open to all the world; read by *Jews*, and others.

The other passages of *Justin* here alleged relate to the *Acts of the Apostles*, the epistle to the *Romans*, the first to the *Corinthians*, the epistles to the *Galatians*, *Ephesians*, *Philippians*, and *Colossians*, the second to the  
*Thessa-*



<sup>140.</sup> A. D. *Theſſalonians*, the epiſtle to the *Hebrews*, the ſecond of *Peter*, and the book of the *Revelation*: which laſt he expreſſly aſcribes to *John*, the Apoſtle of Chriſt. I ſhall leave it to the reader to conſider, how many of the references to any of the other books are full and clear. I think, it was not the method of *Juſtin* to uſe alluſions in his ſtile, ſo often, as ſome other writers do.



C H A P.

The  
I S H  
ho  
are ad  
the Ep  
acquai  
and Jo  
the A  
Juſtin  
which  
very fe  
ſtles of  
nerally  
epiſtle  
them d  
how di  
in thoſe  
of. Bu  
the teſt  
New T



## C H A P. XI.

### The Epistle to DIOGNETUS.

I SHALL now shew, as I promised, how the words of the New Testament are adapted and applied by the author of the Epistle to *Diognetus*. It is plain, he was acquainted with the Gospels of *Matthew* and *John*. I have observed no references to the *Acts of the Apostles*. But whereas in all *Justin's* works hitherto quoted, several of which are of considerable length, there are very few expressions borrowed from the epistles of the New Testament, and those generally obscure, here we shall find many in epistle of about nine folio pages. I shall put them down, and leave every one to judge, how different this is from *Justin's* manner, in those works we have hitherto made use of. But though this epistle be not *Justin's*, the testimonies it affords to the books of the New Testament are very valuable.

I. " Christ

*Matthæw.*

I. "Christ has taught us, *he* (a) says, not to be solicitous [or *take any thought*] about raiment or food." See *Matth.* vi. 25—31.

*John.*

II. The author says, *God* (b) *has sent from heaven the truth, and the holy word*: and he (c) says, *he was from the beginning*: and calls *Christ* the *Word* several (d) times, which character he may be well supposed to have learned from the beginning of *John's* Gospel. He says (e) likewise, that *Christians live in the world, but they are not of the world*. See *John* xvii. 14. 15. 16.

*Romans.*

III. "For (f) what could cover our sins  
 ' but his righteousness? By whom could we  
 ' who were wicked and ungodly be justified,  
 ' but by the only Son of God? O delight-  
 ' ful exchange, o unsearchable contrivance,  
 ' o unexpected benefit! that the iniquity of  
 ' many should be hid by one righteous per-  
 ' son, and the righteousness of one justify  
 ' many wicked.

Herein

(a) Περὶ ἐνδύσεως καὶ τροφῆς μὴ μεριμνᾶν. p. 500. D.

(b) Αὐτὸς ἀπ' οὐρανόων τὴν ἀλήθειαν καὶ τὸν λόγον τὸν ἀγνόν καὶ ἀπερίνοητον ἀνθρώποις ἐνίδρυται. p. 498. B.

(c) Οὐτὸς ὁ ἀπ' ἀρχῆς. p. 501. D.

(d) p. 501. C. D.

(e) Καὶ Χριστιανοὶ ἐν κόσμῳ οἰκοῦσιν, ἔκ εἰς δὲ ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου. p. 497. D.

(f) p. 500. B. C.

# Chap. XI. *The Epistle to* DIOGNETUS. 289

Herein is an allusion to the whole fifth chapter of the epistle to the *Romans*. See also ch. xi. 33.

N. T.

*The epistle to D.*

IV. 1 Cor. iv. 12.  
—being (g) reviled we blefs.

IV. They (h) are 1 Cor.  
reviled and blefs.

V. 1 Cor. viii. 1.  
—knowledge (i) puffeth up, but charity edifieth.

V. The Apostle (k) says: Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.

VI. 1 Cor. ix. 10.  
—That he that ploweth, should plow in hope: and that he that thresheth in hope, should be partaker of his hope. Comp. ver. 7. Who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof?

VI. But he who (l) with fear knows, and seeks life, planteth in hope, expecting fruit.

VII. 2 Cor. x. 3.

VII. They are in 2 Cor.

U

For

(g) Λοιδορέμενοι, εὐλογούμεν.

(h) Λοιδοῦνται καὶ εὐλογῶσιν. p. 497. C.

(i) Ἡ γνῶσις φυσιοῦ, ἡ δὲ ἀγάπη οἰκοδομεῖ.

(k) Ἀποστολὴ—λέγει· ἡ γνῶσις φυσιοῦ, ἡ δὲ ἀγάπη οἰκοδομεῖ. 502. C.

(l) p. 502. C.



*For though we walk the flesh, but they in the flesh, we do live not after the flesh. not war after the ... (m) They are un-*  
*flesh.* known, [he speaks of

2 Cor. iv. 8. By *Christians* in his own  
*honour and dishonour,* time all along] and  
*by evil report and good yet are condemned.*  
*report.*—9. *As un-* They are put to  
*known, and yet well death, and yet are*  
*known: as dying, and revived. They are*  
*behold we live: as poor, and make many*  
*chastened, and not rich. They want all*  
*killed.* 10. *As sor-* things, and abound  
*rowful, and yet al-* in all things. They  
*waies rejoicing: as are in dishonour, and*  
*poor, yet making many in dishonour are glo-*  
*rich: as having no-* rified: They are evil-  
*thing, yet possessing all* spoken of, and are  
*things.* justified. . . . . Being  
 put to death, they  
 are made alive.

The whole passage (of which I have transcribed here but a part) is a most beautiful representation of the suffering circumstances and virtues of the Christians of the author's own time, in allusion to these, and other

Chap. XI. *The Epistle to* DIOGNETUS. 291

other words of the N. T. Therefore a part of it has been already transcribed, and more of it will appear in some following numbers.

N. T.

*The epistle to D.*

VIII. Philip. iii.

VIII. They dwell *Philip.*

20. *For (n) our conversation is in heaven.*

(o) on earth, but they converse in heaven.

IX. 1 Tim. iii.

IX. Who [*the disc- 1 Tim.*

16. *And without controversy great is the mysterie of Godlinesse: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentils, believed on in the world, received up into glory.*

iples] being esteemed (p) by him, were acquainted with the mysteries of the Father. For which cause he sent the Word, that he might appear to the world: who having been rejected of the people, preached by the Apostles, was believed on by the Gentils.

U 2

X.

(n) Ἡμῶν γὰρ τὸ πολίτευμα ἐν ὐρανοῖς ὑπάρχει.

(o) Ἐπὶ γῆς διατρέουσιν, ἀλλ' ἐν ὐρανῷ πολιτεύονται.  
p. 497. B.  
(p) p. 501. D.

<sup>2</sup> Tim.

X. 2 Tim. i. 10.

*Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an Apostle, and (q) a teacher of the Gentils.*

<sup>1</sup> Peter.

XI. 1 Pet. ii. 20.

*—but if (s) when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God.*

XII. 1 Pet. ii. 24.

*Who (u) his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree.*

X. And being (r)

a disciple of the Apostles, I become a teacher of the Gentils." So the author speaks of himself.

XI. When they (t)

do well, they are punished as evil.

XII. Saying him-

self: He (x) took our sins." This is evidently a quotation, and only by a different pointing may be read thus: Saying: He himself took our sins. But perhaps it may be

(q) Καὶ διδάσκαλος ἐδυνῶν.

(s) Ἀλλ' εἰ ἀγαθοποιῶντες, κ. λ.

(u) Ὃς τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἡμῶν αὐτὸς ἀνένεγκεν.

(r) Ἀλλ' ἀποστόλων γενόμενος μαθητὴς, γίνομαι διδάσκαλος ἐδυνῶν. p. 501. C.

(t) Ἀγαθοποιῶντες, ὡς καὶ κοί κολάζονται. 497. C.

(x) Λέγων αὐτός, τὰς ἡμετέρας ἁμαρτίας ἀνεδέξατο. 500. B.

Cha

X  
For  
once  
sins,  
the  
might

XI  
In the  
the lo  
becau  
his on  
to the  
10.  
not th  
but th  
16.  
know

(y) Δ

be doubtful, whether he refers to this text of *Peter*, or to *Isai.* ch. liii.

XIII. 1 Pet. iii. 18. *For Christ also has once suffered for our sins, the (y) just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God.*

XIII. He delivered up (x) his own Son a ransom for us, the holy for the transgressors, the innocent for the guilty, the just for the unjust.

XIV. 1 John iv. 9. *In this was manifested the love of God to us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world.*

XIV. For God 1 *John.* loved mankind — to whom he sent his only begotten Son, to whom he has promised a kingdom in heaven, and will give it to them that love him.

10. *Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us.*

And (a) when you know him, with how great joy will you

16. *And we have known and believed*

U 3 the

(y) Δίκαιος ὑπὲρ ἀδίκων.

(x) Αὐτὸς τὸν ἰδίον υἱὸν ἀπέδοτο λύτρον ὑπὲρ ἡμῶν, τὸν ἁγίου ὑπὲρ ἀνόμων, τὸν ἀκαίον ὑπὲρ τῶν κακῶν, τὸν δίκαιον ὑπὲρ τῶν ἀδίκων. 500. B.

(a) p. 501. A.



*the love that God has* be filled? And how  
*to us.* will you love him,

17. *Herein is our* who so loved you be-  
*love made perfect.* fore? And having

19. *We love him,* loved him, you will  
*because he first loved* be an imitator of his  
*us.* goodnesse.

XV. Speaking of the state of things after the coming of Christ, he has this passage, in which he seems to speak of the volume of the Gospels, and of the epistles of the Apostles.

“ The (b) fear of the law is sung, and  
‘ the grace of the Prophets is known, and  
‘ the faith of the Gospels is established, and  
‘ the tradition of the Apostles is kept, and  
‘ the grace of the church rejoyceth exceed-  
‘ ingly.”

*The sum  
of this te-  
stimonie.*

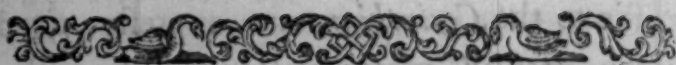
XVI. The passages alleged from this epistle relate to the Gospels of St. Matthew, and St. John; the epistle to the Romans, the first and second to the Corinthians; the epistle to the Philippians; the first and second to Timothie; and the first epistle of St. Peter, and first of St. John. And in most of them  
the

(b) Εἴτα φόβος νόμου ᾄδεται, καὶ προφητῶν χάρις γινώσκεται, καὶ εὐαγγελίων πίσις ἰδρυταί, καὶ ἀποστόλων παράδοσις φυλάσσεται, καὶ ἐκκλησίας χάρις φεικτά. p. 502. A.

Chap  
the al  
epistle  
as the  
seems  
lection  
which  
the P

the allusion is plain. Words of the first epistle to the *Corinthians* are expressly cited, as the *Apostle's*, meaning *Paul*. The author seems likewise to speak of a code, or collection, of *Gospels* and *Apostolical* epistles, which he joins together with the *Law* and the *Prophets*.





## CHAP. XII.

### DIONYSIUS of *Corinth*.

A. D.  
170.

**D**IONYSIUS, Bishop of *Corinth*, flourished, according to *Cave* (a), about the year 170. *Eusebe* in his *Chronicle* (b) at the eleventh year of *Marc Antonine* (which is the year 171. of our Lord) says, “*Dionysius*, Bishop of *Corinth*, a sacred man, was then in reputation.” He wrote seven letters, called by *Eusebe* (c) *Catholic*, or general, they being sent to divers churches, and another to a *Christian* woman. These epistles are mentioned (d) by *Eusebe* in the following order: One to the *Lacedemonians*: another to the *Athenians*: the third to the faithful of *Nicomedia*, which was the capital city of *Bithynia*: the fourth to the church at *Gortyna*, and the rest of the churches of *Crete*:

(a) *Hist. Lit.*

(b) Διονύσιος ἐπίσκοπος Κορίνθου ἀνὴρ ἐξυπαρίσταντο.

(c) Καθολικαῖς πρὸς τὰς ἐκκλησίας ἐπιστολαῖς. H. E. l. 4.

ε. 23. p. 143. C.

(d) *Eod. cap.*

Chap.  
Crete  
togeth  
tus:  
Crete  
to S  
says  
Cbrysa  
epistle  
ments  
St.  
tains a  
he say  
and in  
M. A  
called  
any fo  
I sh  
suitabl  
fragme  
sebe.  
“ T  
sebe, is  
conver

(e) Ib  
(f) L  
(g) V  
ad fin.  
(b) Δ  
α. l. v.

## Chap. XII. DIONYSIUS of Corinth. 297

*Crete*: the fifth to the church in *Amastris*, A. D.  
170.  
together with the churches throughout *Pontus*: the sixth to the *Gnossians*, likewise in *Crete*: the seventh to the *Romans*, inscribed to *Soter* then Bishop. And beside these, says *Eusebe*, there is extant another sent to *Chrysophora*, a most faithful sister. Of these epistles nothing remains, except some fragments in (e) *Eusebe*.

St. *Jerome*'s (f) account of *Dionysius* contains an enumeration of these letters. And he says, " he was a man of great *eloquence* and *industrie*: and that he flourished under *M. Antonine* and *Commodus*." He has been called a Martyr by some, but without (g) any foundation in antiquity.

I shall now put down a few particulars, suitable to our present design, out of the fragments of these epistles preserved by *Eusebe*.

" The letter to the *Athenians*, says *Eusebe*, is (b) exhortatorie to the faith, and a conversation according to the Gospel:"  
meaning

(e) *Ibid. et L. 2. cap. 25. p. 68. A.*

(f) *De Vir. Ill. cap. 27.*

(g) *Vid. Tillemont. Mem. E. T. ii. Denys de Corinthe. ad fin.*

(b) *Διευγερτικὴ πίστεως καὶ τῆς κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον πολιτείας. l. v. c. 23. p. 143. D.*



A. D. meaning by Gospel the doctrine and precepts  
 170. of the *Christian* religion, or the books of the  
 New Testament, in whole or in part. How-  
 ever it must be owned, these are properly the  
 words of *Eusebe*.

*Act.* In this epistle “ he relates (i) moreover,  
 ‘ says *Eusebe*, that *Dionysius* the *Areopagite*,  
 ‘ who was converted to the faith by the A-  
 ‘ postle *Paul*, according to the account given  
 ‘ in the *Acts of the Apostles*, was appointed  
 ‘ the first Bishop of the church of the *Athe-*  
 ‘ *nians*.”

How far *Dionysius* had referred for this to  
 the book of the *Acts of the Apostles*, is doubt-  
 ful, and cannot be determined from *Eusebe*.  
 But every one will upon this occasion regret  
 the losse of these epistles.

In the epistle to the *Nicomeditans* “ he (k)  
 opposeth the heresie of *Marcion*, and stre-  
 nuously asserts and (l) defends the rule of  
 truth.”

It is highly probable, he here maintained  
 the genuinnesse and authority of divers books  
 of the New Testament against *Marcion*, who  
 rejected

(i) p. 144. A.

(k) Ἐν ἡ Μαρκιανὸς αἵρεσιν πολεμῶν, τῷ τῆς ἀληθείας πα-  
 ρίσταται κανόνι. p. 144. A.

(l) *Vid. Vales. in loc.*

(m) re-  
 tailed c

In t  
*Eusebe*  
 of the

We  
 is no r  
 were ex  
 as well

“ F

‘ speak

‘ been

‘ this r

‘ at the

‘ stles o

‘ nel, i

‘ thers

‘ is not

‘ attem

‘ Lord

(m) V

adv. Mar

(n) Γρα

(o) Ἐτι

δεῖσαν, τα

γράφαι, ἡ

γεγέμεναι

κεῖται ὡς

ἐπέκληντα

p. 145. C

(m) rejected some, and mutilated and curtailed others. A. D.  
170.

In the epistle to the church of *Amastris*, *Eusebe* (n) says, " he has inserted expositions of the Divine Scriptures."

We cannot be positive indeed: but there is no reason to forbid our supposing, here were expositions of the scriptures of the *New*, as well as of the *Old Testament*.

" Farther, says *Eusebe*, the same person speaking of his own epistles, as having been corrupted, expresseth himself (o) in this manner: *I have writ epistles*, says he, *at the desire of the brethren. But the Apostles of the Devil have filled them with darkness, taking out some things, and adding others: for whom there is a woe reserved. It is not to be wondered therefore, if some have attempted to corrupt the scriptures of the Lord, [or the Dominic scriptures,] since they*

(m) Vid. *Irenae*. l. i. cap. 27. al. 28. et *Tertullian*. adv. *Marcion*.

(n) Γραφῶν τε θείων ἐξηγήσεις παρατίθενται. ib. B.

(o) Ἐτι δὲ ὁ αὐτὸς καὶ περὶ τῶν ἰδίων ἐπιστολῶν ὡς ραδιουργηθείσων, ταῦτα οὖν ἐπιστολὰς γὰρ ἀδελφῶν ἀξιώσαντων με γράψαι, ἔγραψα· καὶ ταύτας οἱ τε διαβόλοι ἀπόστολοι ζιζανίων γεγέμεκται· αὐτὰ μὲν ἐξαιρῶντες, αὐτὰ δὲ προσιδόντες· οἷς τὸ καὶ κέται· ἡ θαυμαστὸν ἄρα, εἰ καὶ τῶν κυριακῶν ραδιουργησαί τις ἐπέκληνται γραφῶν, ὅποτε καὶ ταῖς ὑποκειμέναις ἐπιβεβλήκασι.  
P. 145. C.

A. D.

170.

“ they have attempted the same thing in writings not comparable to them.”

When he says, *there is a woe reserved* for those persons, *Le Clerc* (p) says, he seems to allude to *Jf. v. 20.* or, to *Rev. xxii. 18. 19.* But of this we cannot be certain.

By *scriptures of the Lord*, he seems to mean the scriptures of the *New Testament* in general, as containing the doctrine and precepts of the Lord Jesus. There were some, who endeavored to corrupt them. He intends, it is likely, in particular, the followers of *Marcion*. However the *Catholic Christians* were upon their guard. These heretics therefore only *attempted* this. And it was a vain attempt, without any considerable success. The alterations they made were detected by the vigilance of the sounder part of *Christians*: who by the numerous copies of most of the books of the *New Testament*, in the Apostolic churches, in almost every part of the world, could without much difficulty discover the frauds, attempted to be practised on their sacred writings.

There is another remarkable fragment of this writer in *Eusebe*, which may deserve to be

(p) *Vid. Hist. E. p. 735. not. 3.*

be plac  
persecu

and S

“ they

“ fam

“ affur

“ writ

“ this

“ toget

“ *Cori*

“ *Paul*

“ *Cori*

“ like

“ taug

“ the s

This

from th

mains o

that his

if they

dering t

pear in

ments.

recomm

demonian

(g) *Euf.*

(h) *See h*

cb. ii. p. 5

Chap. XII. DIONYSIUS of Corinth. 301

be placed here. *Eusebe* is speaking of *Nero's* <sup>A. D.</sup> persecution, and the martyrdoms of *St. Peter*, <sup>170.</sup> and *St. Paul*: And, *says (q) he*, " that  
 " they both suffered martyrdom about the  
 " same time, *Dionysius*, Bishop of *Corinth*,  
 " assures us in his epistle to the *Romans*,  
 " writing in this manner: *So also you by*  
 " *this your so suitable admonition have joined*  
 " *together the plantation of the Romans and the*  
 " *Corinthians, which was made by Peter and*  
 " *Paul. For they both coming to our city of*  
 " *Corinth planted and taught us. And in*  
 " *like manner going together to Italie, they*  
 " *taught there, and suffered martyrdom about*  
 " *the same time.*"

This is all I have to offer at present (B) from this writer. But from the little that remains of him it may be justly concluded, that his epistles would be of great use to us, if they were now extant: especially considering the traces of eminent virtue, that appear in almost every part of his short fragments. He shews a peaceable disposition in recommending peace and unity to the *Lacedemonians*. He shews his goodnesse and candour

(q) *Euf. H. E. l. 2. c. 25. p. 68. A.*

(B) See hereafter ch. xxviii. numb. v. vi. See likewise ch. ii. p. 57.



A. D. <sup>170.</sup> dour in his precept to the *Amastrians*, that all who recover from any fall, whether of vice, or heretical opinion, should be kindly received: and his judgement and good sense, as well as true virtue, in his admonition to *Pinytus*, Bishop of the *Gnostians*; not to impose on the brethren the heavie yoke of continence as necessarie, but to consider the infirmity of the most. In a word, it is the character, which *Eusebe*, gives him, “ that he was useful to all by his divine labours, and not only to the church particularly under his care.” *Dionysius* was an excellent man!





C H A P. XIII.

T A T I A N.

**T***A***T***I**A***N* flourished according to (a)*Cave*, *A. D.*  
about the year 172. In his Oration a-  
gainst the *Gentils*, generally reckoned his on-  
ly remaining work, he has informed us of se-  
veral things concerning himself: That (b) he  
was born in *Assyria*, was originally a Hea-  
then, and (c) was converted to Christianity  
by reading the books of the Old Testament,  
and by reflecting on the corruptions and ab-  
surdities of Gentilism: and that (d) he had  
been a considerable traveller and seen the  
world; and afterwards came to *Rome*, where  
he farther improved himself in arts and sci-  
ences. The Oration itself shews him to be  
a man of reading, and well acquainted with  
the *Greek* learning, which character is also  
univer-*

(a) *Hist. Litt. vid. et Tillemont Mem. Ec. T. 2. Part. 3. Les Encratites. Basnage Ann. 172. §. 3. 4. &c. Du Pin Bibl. Fabric. Bibl. Gr. T. vi. p. 81. &c.*

(b) p. 174. B. C.

(c) p. 165. B.

(d) p. 170. B. C.

A. D. 172. universally allowed him by ancient writers. He mentions *Justin Martyr* with (e) great respect, and by many ancient Christian writers we are well assured, that he was his follower, but some while after his death, which happened about the year 165, he went into a great variety of absurd opinions. He is said to be the author of the sect of the *Encratites*, or *Continents*; condemned the use of wine, denied the lawfulness of marriage, the reality of Christ's sufferings, the salvation of *Adam*; embraced the Aeon of *Valentinus*, asserted with *Marcion*, that there are two Gods. But whatever were his principles in the later part of his life, he will afford a good proof of the antiquity, and high esteem of the Gospels in his time, and be otherwise of considerable use to us.

I shall farther observe briefly the notice that has been taken of him by the ancients. *Irenaeus* (f) says he was a follower of *Justin*, and mentions the heresies he taught after *Justin's* martyrdom. *Clement* (g) of *Alexandria* makes frequent mention of him, and

confutes

(e) p. 157. D. 158. A.

(f) *Adv. Haer. l. i. cap. 28. [al. 30. 31.] l. iii. cap. 23. [al. 36. &c.]*

(g) *Strom. lib. i. p. 320. B. lib. iii. p. 466. A. B. D. 465. C. ἐκ τῶν Θεοδωτοῦ Ἐπιτ. 806. C.*

Char

confut  
ration

sebe (i)

the 12

the ye

Tatian

piphan

of his

St. J

(l) of

first

deal

Justin

churc

afterv

quenc

that c

wards

an in

there

is rec

his wo

perour

lius C

confutes

(b) Con

(i) Tatia

p. 170.

(k) Hae

confutes him. *Origen* (b) speaks of his Oration to the *Greeks* as a learned work. *Eusebe* (i) in his *Chronicle* dates his heresie at the 12. of the Emperour *Marc Antonine*, or the year 172. What *Eusebe* says farther of *Tatian* will be placed below distinctly. *Epiphanius* (k) has given a particular account of his heresie.

A. D.  
172.

St. *Jerome's* account of *Tatian* in his book (l) of *Illustrious Men* is this: " *Tatian*, who first taught rhetoric, and gained a great deal of honour thereby, was a follower of *Justin Martyr*, and flourished in the church, as long as he adhered to him. But afterwards puffed up with the pride of eloquence, he founded a new heresie, called that of the *Encratites*, which was afterwards emproved by *Severus*. *Tatian* wrote an infinite number of books, of which there is one writ against the *Gentils*, which is reckoned the most considerable of all his works. He flourished under the Emperour *M. Antoninus Verus*, and *L. Aurelius Commodus*."

X

I shall

(b) *Cont. Cels. l. 1. p. 14.*

(i) *Tatianus haereticus agnoscitur: a quo Encratitae. Clr. p. 170.*

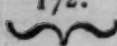
(k) *Haer. 26. al. 46.*

(l) *Cap. 29.*



A. D.

172.



I shall take no more passages concerning the *historie* of this writer. I proceed to those, which will set before us his *testimonie* to the Scriptures of the *New Testament*.

Gospels.

I. *Eusebe* in his *Ecclesiastical Historie*, having given an account of *Tatian*, and his opinions from *Irenaeus*, and then of *Severus*, and his followers, who had made additions to some of *Tatian's* opinions, adds: “ But  
 ‘ (m) their first leader, *Tatian*, composed I  
 ‘ know not what harmonie and collection  
 ‘ of the Gospels, which he called [*DiaTef-*  
 ‘ *saron*] of the four, which is still in the  
 ‘ hands of some. And it is said, that he  
 ‘ had the assurance to alter [or *explain*] some  
 ‘ words of the Apostle, as pretending to  
 ‘ correct the composition and order of his  
 ‘ stile. He left a great number of books.  
 ‘ Of which, his celebrated discourse *against*  
 ‘ the *Gentils* has been quoted by many.  
 ‘ Which seems to be the most elegant, and  
 ‘ most useful of all his writings.”

This

(m) Ὁ μὲντοι γε πρότερον αὐτῶν ἀρχηγὸς ὁ Τατιανὸς συνάφειαν τινα καὶ συναγωγὴν ἐκ οἷδ' ὅπως τῶν εὐαγγελίων συνθεῖς, τὸ διὰ τεσσάρων τέτο προσηνόμασεν· ὃ καὶ παρὰ τισιν εἰσέτι νῦν φέρεται· τῷ δὲ ἀποστόλῃ φασὶ τολμήσαι τινὰς αὐτοῦ μεταφράσαι φωνὰς, ὡς ἐπιδιορθώμενον αὐτῶν τὴν τῆς φράσεως σύνταξιν. H. E. L. iv. c. 29. Vid. et cap. 16. de *Tatiano*.

This is a strong proof, that there were <sup>A. D.</sup> four, and but four Gospels, which were in <sup>172.</sup> esteem with *Christians*. It seems, that *Eusebe* had not seen this *Harmonie* or collection of *Tatian*.

*Theodoret* (n), who flourished in the fifth centurie, about 423, speaks of this book in the following manner: "He [*Tatian*] composed a Gospel, which is called *dia tessaron*, of the four, leaving out the genealogies, and every thing that shews the Lord to have been born of the seed of *David* according to the flesh. Which has been used not only by those of his sect, but also by them who follow the Apostolical doctrine; they not perceiving the fraud of the composition, but simply using it as a compendious book. I have also met with above two hundred of these books, which were in esteem in our churches: all which I took away, and laid aside in a parcel, and placed in their room the Gospels of the four Evangelists."

*Victor Capuanus*, a writer of the sixth centurie, says, that *Tatian* called his harmonie *δια πέντε*, of the five. Whence some learned

X 2

moderns

(n) *Hæret. Fab. l. i. cap. 20.*

A. D. 172. moderns have inferred, that *Tatian* used also the Gospel according to the *Hebrews*. *Ittigius* (o) has shewn it, I think, to be very probable, that this *δια πέντε*, of the five, in *Victor* is only an error of the transcribers for *δια πάντων*, of all. *Eusebe* calls it of the four, as does *Theodoret*. All the fault that *Theodoret*, who had seen so many copies, finds with this performance is, that *Tatian* had left out the genealogies.

It is said, that (p) *Ephrem* the Syrian, of the fourth centurie, wrote commentaries upon *Tatian's* harmonie, or *Diateffaron*.

Whether this *Harmonie* be now extant, is disputed by (q) learned men. I think, I need not concern myself with that question.

The *Apostle*, whose words *Tatian* had the assurance to alter, or explain, undoubtedly is *Paul*. But it cannot be determined from this passage of *Eusebe*, what epistles of *Paul* *Tatian* owned, or how many of them he had

(o) *Tho. Ittigii de Haeresiarchis. Sect. 2. cap. 12. p. 182.*

(p) *Syriacum Tatiani Diateffaron commentaris illustravit Sanctus Ephraemus, testibus Barsalibaeo et Barhebraeo, quorum verba retuli T. i. p. 57. 58. Affeman. Bib. Orient. T. 3. P. i. p. 13.*

(q) *Vid. Vales. not ad Euseb. H. E. l. iv. cap. 29. Tillemont. Mem. T. ii. Part. 3. Les Encratites. Not. 2. Basnage Ann. 172. n. vi. Fabr. Bibl. Gr. T. vi. p. 83.*

had *explained*, or *corrected*. Nay it seems, *A. D.*  
 that *Eusebe* had never seen the work itself. *172.*

What he writes of it is only from the report of others. *Mill* (r) thinks, there was no ill design in this work of *Tatian*: That his *altering the words* of *Paul* amounted to no more than some interlinearie or marginal explications; putting here and there over against the Apostle's other synonymous words, which were somewhat clearer. *Tatian's correcting of the composition of the Apostle's stile* likewise, according to him, was only disposing in the margin some of the words of *St. Paul* in a more natural order, without intending, or in the event doing any prejudice to the Apostle's original text.

The *Oration* against the *Gentils* being commended by so many affords an argument, that it was written before the year 172, about which time *Tatian* left the Catholic opinions. And as it seems to have been writ after *Ju-Justin's* death, therefore some time between 165. and 172. In this *Oration* are a few references or allusions to the *Gospels*, which I shall take notice of.

X 3

N. T.

(r) *Proleg. n. 361. 362.*



A. D.

N. T.

Tatian.

172.

Luke.

II. Luke vi. 25.

Woe (s) unto you that  
laugh now: for ye  
shall mourn and weep.

John.

III. John i. 3. All

(u) things were made  
by him, and without  
him was not any thing  
made, that was made.

IV. John i. 5. And

(y) the light shineth  
in darknesse, and the  
darknesse comprehend-  
eth it not.

II. You may (t)  
laugh, but you will  
weep.

III. Forsaking de-  
mons give up your-  
selves to the one God.  
For (x) all things are  
by him, and without  
him was not any thing  
made.

IV. This is (z)  
what is said: The  
darknesse comprehend-  
eth not the light....  
And the word, [or  
reason] is the light of  
God, the ignorant  
soul is darknesse.

V. He seems to refer to the beginning of  
St.

(s) Οὐαὶ ὑμῖν οἱ γελοῦντες  
νῦν ὅτι πένθησέτε, καὶ κλαύ-  
σετε.

(u) Πάντα δι' αὐτῶ ἐγένε-  
το, καὶ χωρὶς αὐτῶ ἐγένετο  
ἃ δὲ ἐν ὁ γέγονεν.

(y) Καὶ ἡ σκοτία αὐτὸ ἐ  
καταλαμβάνει.

(t) Γελοῦτε δὲ ὑμεῖς, καὶ  
κλαύσοντες. 167. C.

(x) Πάντα ὑπ' αὐτῶ, καὶ  
χωρὶς αὐτῶ γέγονεν ἃ δὲ ἐν.  
158. D.

(z) Καὶ τὸτο ἐστὶν ἄρα τὸ  
ἐρημένον ἡ σκοτία τὸ φῶς  
καταλαμβάνει. p. 152. C.

Chap.

St. John.

likewise

words

VI.

to be tr

is much

the sam

as thou

charact

think i

had an

VII.

that Ta

cording

riage fr

And fr

tian ha

words

(a) p.

(b) Πν

(c) p.

(d) Γρ

τῆρα κατ

κοινωνία

460. A.

(e) Τα

omnem c

bitratur,

versum n

mento: s

in carne

qui uxore

corruptio

St. *John's* Gospel in another place (a). He <sup>A. D.</sup> likewise says (b), *God is a spirit*, in the very <sup>172.</sup> words of *John* iv. 24.

VI. "He (c) that wants nothing is not <sup>Acts.</sup> to be traduced by us, as if he wanted." This is much the same thought, and applied to the same purpose with *Paul's*, *Acts* xvii. 25. *as though he needeth any thing*. But it is a character of the Deity so obvious, that I think it cannot determine us to suppose, he had an eye to those words of the Apostle.

VII. St. (d) *Clement* has informed us, <sup>i Corinthh.</sup> that *Tatian* in a book called *Perfection according to the Saviour*, argued against marriage from the words of *Paul*, *1 Cor.* vii. 5. And from St. *Jerome* (e) it appears, that *Tatian* had abused to the same purpose the words of *Paul*, *Gal.* vi. 8. But I do not

X 4

think

(a) p. 245. A. B. C.

(b) Πνεῦμα ὁ Θεός. p. 144. C.

(c) p. 144. D.

(d) Γράφει γὰρ κατὰ λέξιν ἐν τῷ περὶ τοῦ κατὰ τὸν σωτῆρα καταρτισμοῦ. Συμφωνίαν μὲν οὖν ἀρμόζει προσευχῇ· κοινωνία δὲ φθορᾶς λύει τὴν ἔντευξιν. κ. λ. *Strom.* l. iii. p. 460. A. B.

(e) Tatianus qui putativam Christi carnem introducens, omnem conjunctionem masculi ad feminam immundam arbitratur, Encratitarum vel acerrimus haeresiarches, tali adversum nos sub occasione praesentis testimonii usus est argumento: Si qui seminat in carne, de carne metet corruptionem: in carne autem seminat, qui mulieri jungitur. Ergo et is qui uxore utitur, et seminat in carne ejus, de carne metet corruptionem. *Comm. in Gal.* cap. 6.

*A. D.* think it needful to translate either of these  
 172. passages.

And from (*f*) *Irenaeus* we learn, "That  
 ' *Tatian* had endeavored to support his opi-  
 ' nion concerning *Adam*, that he was not  
 ' saved, from these words 1 *Cor.* xv. 22. that  
 ' in *Adam* all die : and from some other ex-  
 ' pressions of the Apostle."

*Titus.*

VIII. Lastly, St. *Jerome* in his preface to  
 his commentarie upon the epistle to *Titus*  
 says: " But *Tatian* (*g*) the Patriarch of the  
 ' *Encratites*, though he rejected some of  
 ' *Paul's* epistles, was of opinion, that this  
 ' to *Titus* ought to be owned as the Apostle's  
 ' without any hesitation."

*The sum of  
 his testi-  
 monie.*

IX. We see then plainly, that the Gos-  
 pels, and many of *Paul's* epistles were re-  
 ceived by *Tatian*, and owned by him to the  
 last. And his rejecting any of the rest is of  
 no weight, when a man gave way to such  
 manifest absurdities, as he did in the later  
 part of his life.

C H A P.

(*f*) Tentans et subinde uti hujusmodi a *Paulo* assidue dictis :  
 quoniam in *Adam* omnes morimur. l. iii. cap. 23. §. 8. al.  
 cap. 39.

(*g*) Sed *Tatianus* Encratarum Patriarches, qui et ipse  
 nonnullas *Pauli* epistolas repudiavit, hanc vel maxime, hoc  
 est, ad *Titum*, Apostoli pronunciandam credidit ; parvi  
 pendens *Marcionis* et aliorum, qui cum eo in hac parte con-  
 sentiunt, assertionem.



HE

conve-  
 posed,  
 the se  
 the  
 Comm  
 ' faith  
 ' in a  
 Eusebe  
 Rome :  
 many  
 perceiv  
 ' (c) I

(a) H  
 (b) 'Ev  
 παρ' οὖν  
 (c) Γεν  
 παρ' οὖν  
 ἀνιήτω δ  
 (d) V



## CHAP. XIV.

### HEGESIPPUS.

**H**EGESIPPUS, as we are informed A. D.  
173.  
by *Eusebe* (a), was originally a Jew, converted to the *Christian* faith. He is supposed, to have been born in the begining of the second centurie: and died, according to the *Alexandrian* Chronicle, in the reign of *Commodus*. “ He wrote, says (b) *Eusebe*, a ‘ faithful relation of the Apostolic preaching ‘ in a very plain stile.” And in these books, *Eusebe* says, he mentions his journey to *Rome*: that in his way he conversed with many Bishops: that in all of them he had perceived one and the same doctrine. “ When ‘ (c) I came to *Rome*, says he, I took (d) up ‘ my

(a) H. E. l. iv. c. 22. p. 143. B.

(b) Ἐν πέντε δὴ οὖν συγγράμμασιν ἔτ. τὴν ἀπλανῆ πα-  
ράδοσιν τοῦ ἀποστολικοῦ κηρύγματος ἀπλυσάτη συντάξει  
γραφῆς ὑπομνηματισάμενος. L. iv. c. 8. init.

(c) Γενόμενος δὲ ἐν Ῥώμῃ διαδοχὴν [al. διατριβὴν] ἐπει-  
σάμενος μέχρις ἀνικτήτος, οὗ διακόνου ἦν ἐλεύθερος, καὶ παρὰ  
ἀνικτήτος διαδέχεται σὸν πατέρα, μετ’ οὗ ἐλεύθερος. ibid. c. 22.

(d) Vid. *Vales.* not. in loc. *Eus.*



A. D.  
173.

(A) my abode with *Anicetus*, whose Deacon *Eleutherus* [then] was. After *Anicetus* succeeded *Soter*, and after him *Eleutherus*." And in another place (e) *Eusebe* says, that *Hegesippus* writes, he came to *Rome* in the time of *Anicetus*, and staid there until the Bishoprick of *Eleutherus*. Though therefore learned men are not exactly agreed about the time of these Bishops of *Rome*; we must suppose the five books of *Hegesippus* not finished till after 170, very (f) few placing the beginning of *Eleutherus*'s Bishoprick before that year.

*Eusebe* (g) however assures us, he was in the first succession of the Apostles: and *Stephen* (h) *Gobar*, in *Photius*, calls him an ancient and Apostolical man. *St. Jerome* in his Catalogue (i) writes of him to this purpose: "*Hegesippus*, who was near the times of the Apostles, composed a historie of the affairs of the church from the passion of our Lord

(A) Or, as others: *I composed a succession* (of the Bishops of *Rome*) to *Anicetus*. *Vid. Pearson. op. Post. p. 24. Grabe Spicil. T. 2. p. 212. et 256.*

(e) *Ibid. cap. xi. p. 125. B.*

(f) *Vid. Grabe spic. T. 2. p. 204.*

(g) Ἐπὶ τῆς πρώτης τῶν ἀποστόλων γενομένης διαδοχῆς. I. 2. c. 23. p. 63. C.

(h) Ἀρχαῖος τῆς ἀνθρ καὶ ἀπιστολικός. *Phot. Cod. 232.*

(i) *Cap. 22.*

Char

‘ Lon  
‘ get  
‘ ben  
‘ in a  
‘ the  
‘ low  
‘ to  
‘ He  
‘ An  
‘ con  
‘ rus,  
‘ ly

Th  
fragm  
fiastic  
from  
sently  
to our  
shall

(k) U  
meret c  
(B) S  
quia ex  
stat, eu  
scriptor  
fitis fr  
Autant  
peu exai  
narratio  
et alioru

‘ Lord to his own time. And collecting to-  
 ‘ gether a great variety of matters for the  
 ‘ benefit of his readers, he wrote five books  
 ‘ in a plain and simple manner, imitating (k)  
 ‘ therein the stile of those whose life he fol-  
 ‘ lowed: [or, as perhaps some may choose  
 ‘ to have it rendered, *whose life he wrote.*]  
 ‘ He says, he came to *Rome* in the time of  
 ‘ *Anicetus*, the tenth Bishop after *Peter*, and  
 ‘ continued there to the time of *Eleuthe-*  
 ‘ *rus*, Bishop of the same City, who former-  
 ‘ ly had been Deacon of *Anicetus*.”

These five books are all lost, except some fragments, preserved by *Eusebe* in his Ecclesiastical Historie, and one more in *Photius* from *Stephen Gobar*: Of which I shall presently give an account, so far as they relate to our present subject. And in the margin I shall put the character (B) of this writer, as given

(k) Ut quorum vitam sectabatur, dicendi quoque exprimeret characterem.

(B) Suspectum tamen merito Hegesippi est testimonium, quia ex reliquis ejus apud Eusebium fragmentis abunde constat, eum non accuratum, sed credulum ac fabulosum fuisse scriptorem. Ingenuum hic est judicium Dupinii, qui recensitis fragmentis Historiae Ecclesiasticae Hegesippi addit. *Autant que nous pouvons juger par ce qui nous reste, il estoit peu exact, et plus rempli d'histoires feintes et fabuleuses, que narrations solides et veritables.* Idem judicium est Basnagii, et aliorum. *Lampe Prolegom.* In Joann. l. i. c. 4. n. x.

A. D. given by some moderns, though it be not  
 173. very much to his advantage.

I. The first fragment (1) is his relation of the death of *James the just at Jerusalem*. In this narration the stile of the scriptures of the New Testament often appears. When the *Jews*, (*Scribes* and *Pharisees*) and others, came to *James* to desire him to tell the people his opinion of *Jesus*, they say to him:

Matth.  
xxii. 16.  
Luke xx.  
21.  
Matth.  
xxvi. 64.

"For (m) we, and all the people bear witness to you, that you are just, and accept no man's person." Afterwards, *James* says to them: "Why (n) do you ask me concerning *Jesus the son of man*? He sits in heaven, on the right hand of the Great Power, and will come in the clouds of heaven. Whereby many were fully persuaded, and glorified God for that testimonie of *James*, saying, *Hosanna to the son of David*." When they had thrown him down from the battlement of the temple, he not being quite dead, they began to cast stones

Matth.  
xxi. 9. 15.

at

(1) *Eus. H. E. l. 2. c. 23.*

(m) Ἡμεῖς γὰρ μαρτυροῦμεν σοι καὶ πᾶς ὁ λαός, ὅτι δίκαιός εἓς καὶ ὅτι πρόσωπον ἔχει λαμβάνεις. p. 64. C.

(n) Τί με ἐπερωτᾶτε περὶ Ἰησοῦ τοῦ υἱοῦ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου, καὶ αὐτὸς κάθεται ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ ἐκ δεξιῶν τῆς μεγάλης δυνάμεως, καὶ μέλλει ἔρχεσθαι ἐπὶ τῶν νεφελῶν τοῦ οὐρανοῦ καὶ πολλὰς πληροποριζόντων καὶ δοξάζοντων ἐπὶ τῇ μαρτυρίᾳ τοῦ Ἰακώβου, καὶ λεγόντων ὡς ἀνὰ τὸν υἱὸν Δαβὶδ. p. 64. D.

Char

at his

' I be

' giv

' do.

' wit

' Jes

II.

conta

after

' says

' kin

' wh

' fles

' the

' the

' he

' Ch

TH

conta

cond

plain

pel v

(o) 2

κύριε 3

65. B.

(p)

ται, ὅτ

(q) 1

(r)

p. 89.

at him. " But (o) he kneeling down said: *A. D.*

' *I beseech thee, O Lord God the Father, for-* <sup>173.</sup>

' *give them: for they know not what they* *Acts vii.*

' *do..... This man was (p) a faithful* *60.*

' *witnesse both to the Jews and Greeks, that* *Luke xxiii.*

' *Jesus was the Christ."* <sup>34.</sup> *Acts xx.*

21.

II. The next (q) fragment of this writer contains an account of *Domitian's* enquiry after the posterity of *David*. " At that time ' *says he*, there were yet remaining of the ' kindred of Christ the grandsons of *Jude*, ' who was called his brother according to the ' flesh. These some accused, as being of ' the race of *David*. And *Evocatus* brought ' them before *Domitianus Caesar*. For (r) ' he too was afraid of the coming of the ' Christ, as well as *Herod*."

*Matth. ii.*

This passage deserves to be remarked. It contains a reference to the historie in the second chapter of *St. Matthew*. And shews plainly, that this part of *St. Matthew's Gospel* was owned by this *Hebrew Christian*.

But

(o) Ἀλλὰ στραφείς ἔθηκε τὰ γόνατα, λέγων παρακαλῶ κύριε θεὲ πατήρ, ἄφες αὐτοῖς· οὐ γὰρ οἶδασιν τὸ ποιῶσιν. p. 65. B.

(p) Μάρτυς οὗτος ἀληθὴς Ἰουδαίοις τε καὶ Ἑλλήσι γεγέννηται, ὅτι Ἰησοῦς ὁ Χριστός ἐστιν. p. 65. C.

(q) *Euf. H. E. l. 3. c. 19. 20.*

(r) Ἐφοβεῖτο γὰρ τὴν παρουσίαν τοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὡς καὶ Ἡρώδης. p. 89. C.



A. D. But *Epiphanius* (s) informs us, that the Gospel of the *Ebionites* begins thus: *It came to pass in the days of Herod the King of Judea, that John came baptizing with the baptism of repentance in the river Jordan.* Which is the beginning of the third chapter of St. *Matthew*, a little altered. And he there (t) says expressly, that their Gospel called according to *Matthew*, is *defective and corrupted*. It is plain however from this passage, that *Hegesippus* received the historie in the second chapter of St. *Matthew*. So that he used our *Greek* Gospel. Or, if he used only the *Hebrew* edition of St. *Matthew's* Gospel, this historie must have been in it in his time.

These grandsons of *Jude* were interrogated by *Domitian* concerning their own substance, which they informed him of, and gave him proofs, they were poor laboring men. “ Being asked, says (u) *Hegesippus*, of Christ and his kingdom, of what kind

Luke xix.  
11.

(s) *Haer.* 30. §. 13. p. 138. A. T. i. ed. Petav.

(t) *Ibid.* init. §. 13.

(u) Ἐρωτηθέντας δὲ περὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ τῆς βασιλείας αὐτοῦ, ὅποια τις ἦν, καὶ πότε καὶ ποῖ φαινησόμενοι; λόγον δοῦναι, ὡς ἡ κοσμικὴ μὲν οὐδ' ἐπίγειον, ἐπεράνιον δὲ καὶ ἀγγελικὴν τυγχάνει, ἐπὶ συντελείᾳ τοῦ αἵαντος γενησόμενῃ, ὅπνικα ἐλθὼν ἐν δόξῃ κρίνῃ ζῶντας καὶ νεκρούς, καὶ ἀποδώσει ἕκαστον κατὰ τὰ ἐπιτηδεύματα αὐτοῦ. p. 90. A. B.

‘ it was, and when and where it should ap- A. D.  
 ‘ pear? They answered, that it was not 173.  
 ‘ worldly nor terrene, but heavenly and an-  
 ‘ gelical, and would be in the end of the  
 ‘ world, when he coming in glorie should  
 ‘ judge the quick and the dead, and render 2 Tim. iv.  
 ‘ to every man according to his works.” 1.

I do not pretend absolutly to determine a reference to any particular texts in these last words. But I have thought it very proper to place them here, together with what precedes, as representing the doctrine of the New Testament very much in the stile of it.

I omit the next fragment of this author in (x) *Eusebe*, giving the historie of the martyrdom of *Simeon* Bishop of *Jerusalem*, it containing nothing suitable to our present design.

III. But afterwards in another chapter (y) *Eusebe* observes several things, which were in the five books of this writer: “ That  
 ‘ in his journey to *Rome* he visited many Bi-  
 ‘ shops, in particular *Primus* Bishop of *Co-*  
 ‘ *rinth*, where he staid many daies: and  
 ‘ and where, says he, we received mutual  
 ‘ refreshment from the true faith. From  
 ‘ thence he went to *Rome*, and staid there to  
 ‘ the

(x) L. 3. c. 32.

(y) L. iv. cap. 22.

A. D. ' the time of *Eleutherus*. He (z) adds:

173.

' And in every succession, and in every city,  
' the same doctrine is taught, which the Law,  
' and the Prophets, and the Lord preacheth."  
Here it seems, that by *the Lord*, he must  
mean the scriptures of the New Testament:  
which he looks upon, as containing the  
very doctrine, taught and preached by Jesus  
Christ. However he afterwards speaks of  
heresies, but the true church was free from  
these.

IV. " He also takes some things, says  
' (a) *Eusebe*, out of the Gospel according  
' to the *Hebrews*, and out of the *Syriac*,  
' and in particular out of the *Hebrew* tongue;  
' manifesting hereby, that he is one of the  
' faithful from among the *Hebrews*."

The former part of this sentence is ren-  
dered agreeably to the translation of *Valesius*,  
which I suppose is generally taken very con-  
tentedly: though on the other hand, some  
have been mightily puzzled about the true  
meaning. I think, *Valesius*'s version is agree-  
able enough to the Greek in *Eusebe*. But one  
would

(z) Ἐν ἑκάστῃ δὲ διαδοχῇ καὶ ἐν ἑκάστῃ πόλει ἕτως ἔχει, ὡς  
ὁ νόμος κηρύττεται, καὶ οἱ προφήται, καὶ ὁ κύριος. p. 142. C.

(a) Ἐκ τε τοῦ καθ' ἑβραίων εὐαγγελίου, καὶ τοῦ συριακοῦ, καὶ  
ἰδίως ἐκ τῆς ἑβραϊστῆς διαλέκτου τινὰ τίθησιν, ἐμφαίνων ὅτι  
ἑβραῖος αὐτὸν πεπιστευκέναι. p. 143. B.

Cha

would  
are h  
correc  
has g  
sense  
In the  
which  
daic t  
Hebre  
there n

Let

ever so  
there v  
Hegesip  
how fa  
help us  
this Go  
the Sy  
was a t  
V.  
to be t  
' courf

(b) In e  
Syroque se  
adv. Pelay  
ed. Bened.

(c) Καί  
ἐπὶ τῶν αὐ  
τινὰ τέτων

# Chap. XIV. HEGESIPPUS.

321

would be apt to suspect, our present copies are here hardly right. I cannot pretend to correct them. But I imagine, that St. *Jerome* has given us, though undesignedly, the true sense of what *Eusebe* wrote, when he says: *In the (b) Gospel according to the Hebrews, which is writ indeed in the Syriac and Chaldaic tongue, [or Syro-Chaldaic tongue] but in Hebrew characters, is this historie, which he there relates.*

A. D.

173.

Let this passage of *Eusebe* be allowed to be ever so obscure, I think it affords proof, that there was a *Hebrew Gospel* in the time of *Hegesippus*, and that he made use of it. But how far, we cannot say. Here is nothing to help us to determine the question, whether this Gospel according to the *Hebrews*, writ in the *Syriac* language, but in *Hebrew* letters, was a translation, or an original.

V. The last passage concerning our author to be taken from *Eusebe* is this: “ And discou-  
‘ coursing (c) of the books called apocry-  
‘ phal,

(b) In evangelio juxta Hebraeos, quod Chaldaico quidem Syroque sermone, sed Hebraicis Litteris scriptum est: . . . .  
adv. Pelagian. lib. iii. init. Op. T. iv. Par. 2. p. 533.  
ed. Bened.

(c) Καί περὶ τῶν λεγομένων δὲ ἀποκρύφων διαλαμβάνων,  
ἐπὶ τῶν αὐτοῦ χρόνων πρὸς τινῶν αἰρετικῶν ἀναπεπλάσθαι  
τὰς τούτων ἱστορίας. p. 143. B.



A. D. 173. ' phal, he relates, that some of them were  
 ' forged by some heretics in his time."

Whether he speaks of apocryphal books of the Old Testament, or the New, may be doubtful, because the last preceding observation of *Eusebe* is, that this writer, as well as *Irenaeus*, and some other ancients, call the *Proverbs of Solomon* by the name of *Wisdom*. But the connexion in *Eusebe* does not, I think, afford any certain proof, that he means the apocryphal books of the Old Testament. However this we may learn hence, that the first *Christians* were not only upon their guard against heretics, but also against their forgeries.

VI. Beside these, there is a remarkable fragment of *Hegeſippus*, preserved by *Photius* (d) in his extracts out of *Stephen Gobar*, a tritheistical writer of the sixth centurie.

*Gobar* there says: "The Eye hath not seen,  
 ' nor ear heard, neither have entered into the  
 ' heart of man the things which God hath pre-  
 ' pared for the righteous: though (e) He-  
 ' geſippus,

(d) Cod. 232. p. 893.

(e) Ἡγήσιππος μεντοι, ἀρχαῖος τε ἀνὴρ καὶ ἀποστολικός, ἐν τῷ πέμπτῳ τῶν ἀπομνημάτων, ἐκ οἷο' ὅ, τι καὶ παθόν, μαρτὴν μὲν ἐφηδία ταῦτα λέγει, καὶ καταψεύδεται τὸς ταῦτα φημένους  
 (f) V

# Chap. XIV. HEGESIPPUS.

323

' *gesippus*, an ancient and Apostolical man, <sup>A. D.</sup>  
' in the fifth book of his Commentaries, [or <sup>173.</sup>  
' *Memoirs*,] I know not for what reason,  
' says, this is said without ground, and that  
' they who say so, contradict the Divine Scrip-  
' tures, and the Lord, who says: *Blessed* <sup>Matt. xiii.</sup>  
' *are your eyes which see, and your ears which* <sup>16.</sup>  
' *bear* : and what follows."

Here is a good quotation of St. *Matthew's*  
Gospel. ch. xiii. 16. The other words are  
in 1 *Cor.* ii. 9. *Is.* lxiv. 4. It is likely, *He-*  
*gesippus* did not blame (*f*) these words them-  
selves, but only some interpretation of them,  
by persons who pretended, that Jesus Christ  
was a meer phantom, and that the senses  
were not good judges of his actions.

VII. We have then seen in *Hegesippus* di- <sup>The sum of</sup>  
vers things, expressed in the stile of the *Gos-* <sup>his testi-</sup>  
*pels*, and *Acts*, and some other parts of the <sup>monie.</sup>  
New Testament. He refers to the historie  
in the second chapter of St. *Matthew*, and  
recites another text of that Gospel, as spoken  
by the Lord. He speaks of the doctrine

Y 2

taught

φαμένους τῶν τε θείων γραφῶν, καὶ τοῦ κυρίου λέγοντος, Μα-  
κάριοι οἱ ὀφθαλμοὶ ὑμῶν οἱ βλέποντες, καὶ τὰ ὦτα ὑμῶν τὰ  
ἀκούοντα, καὶ ἐξῆς. Apud *Matth.* ὑμῶν δὲ μακάριοι οἱ ὀφθαλ-  
μοί, ὅτι βλέπουσι καὶ τὰ ὦτα ὑμῶν, ὅτι ἀκούει.

(*f*) Vid. *Grabe* *Opusc.* T. 2. p. 256.

<sup>173.</sup> *A. D.* taught by the *Law, the Prophets, and the Lord*. By which last expression he must mean some writing or writings, containing the doctrine of Christ. Moreover he used the Gospel according to the *Hebrews*, and says, there had been books forged by *heretics*: but they were such only as were called *Apocryphal*, and were not received by the *Catholics*, as of authority.



CHAP.

T  
the f  
great  
we f  
some  
Ma  
170.  
Some  
angel  
epistle  
witho  
Tillem  
suppor  
which  
cients  
or ma

(a) H



## C H A P. XV.

### M E L I T O.

**T**HIS writer will afford little relating *A. D.*  
to our present design. However for <sup>177.</sup>  
the sake of that little, and his otherwise  
great merit, and many labours, it is very fit,  
we should here settle his time, and give  
some account of him.

*Melito* is placed by (a) *Cave* at the year  
170. He was Bishop of *Sardis* in *Lydia*.  
Some moderns have supposed him to be the  
angel of the church of *Sardis*, to whom the  
epistle is directed *Rev. iii. 1—6*. But this is  
without ground from antiquity. And, as  
*Tillemont* (b) observes, it would oblige us to  
suppose, he was Bishop above seventy years:  
which is not easie to believe, none of the an-  
cients calling him a disciple of the Apostles,  
or making any mention of his great age.

Y 3

And

(a) *Hist. Lit.*

(b) *Mem. Ec. T. ii, Meliton, Note 1.*



A. D.  
177.

And *Eusebe* placeth him after several others, who flourished about the midle of the second centurie.

*Polycrates* Bishop of *Ephesus* calls him an eunuch, on account, as is generally supposed, of his living a chaste and self-denying life in celibacie for the sake of the Gospel. "What need I, says (c) he, mention *Melito* the eunuch, who conducted himself in all things by the Holy Spirit, who lies buried in *Sardis*."

St. *Jerome* (d) informs us, "That *Tertullian*, in one of his books, praises *Melito's* elegant and oratorical genius, and says, that he was esteemed a Prophet by many of our people."

He travelled into *Palestine* on purpose to learn the number of the books of the Old Testament. His catalogue (e) is preserved by *Eusebe*, who took it out of *Melito's* preface to his book of *Extracts out of the Law* and

(c) Τί δὲ δὲ λέγειν—μελίτωνα τὸν εὐνοῦχον, τὸν ἐν ἀγίῳ πνεύματι πάντα πολιτεύσασμενον. ap. *Euf.* H. E. l. v. c. 24. p. 191. D.

(d) Hujus elegans et declamatorium ingenium laudans *Tertullianus* in septem libris quos scripsit adversus *Ecclesiam* pro *Montano* dicit eum a plerisque nostrorum prophetam putari. *De Script.* III. n. 24.

(e) *Euf.* H. E. l. iv. cap. 26. p. 148. 149.

Cha  
and  
*Eusebe*  
unive  
book  
non.  
*Eph*  
of th  
tian  
M  
an A  
the  
place  
170,  
death  
colleg  
ed in  
*Alex*  
could  
or th  
follow  
(b) f  
of th  
Apol  
Eccle

(f)  
(g)  
(b)  
(i)

and the Prophets. It is a catalogue, says *A. D.* Eusebe, of the scriptures of the Old Testament <sup>177.</sup> universally acknowledged. It contains the books received by the Jews into their Canon. But he does not mention the book of *Esther*. It is the first catalogue of the books of the Old Testament recorded by any *Christian* writer.

*Melito* (*f*) presented, or addressed at least, an Apologie to *Marc Antonine* in behalf of the *Christians* then under sufferings. It is placed by *Eusebe* in his Chronicle at the year 170, the tenth of that Emperour, after the death of *Lucius Verus*, adopted brother, and colleague of *Marc Antonine*, which happened in the year 169. With *Eusebe* agrees the *Alexandrian* Chronicle. It is evident, it could not be writ sooner than the year 170, or the later part of 169. *Pagi* (*g*) herein follows the Chronicle of *Eusebe*. *Tillemont* (*b*) from the manner in which *Melito* speaks of the Emperour's son in a passage of his Apologie, (recorded by (*i*) *Eusebe* in his Ecclesiastical Historie) concludes, that *Com-*  

Y 4

*modus*

(*f*) *Euf. H. E. l. iv. cap. 26. p. 148. 149.*

(*g*) *Critic. in B. 170. §. 3.*

(*b*) *Meliton, as above, note 2.*

(*i*) *L. iv. c. 26. p. 148. A.*

*A. D.* <sup>177.</sup> *modus* had then the *tribunitian power*, if he was not colleague with his father in the Empire. The former *Commodus* received in the year 175, and equal power with his father *Marc Antonine* in 176, or 177. *Tillemont* therefore is inclined to place this Apologie in the year 175, and *Basnage* (*k*) is rather for 177. This argument for the later date of this Apologie is so cogent, that I likewise choose to place it in 177.

*Eusebe* (*l*) has given us this catalogue of *Melito's* works. "Two books concerning *Easter*: *Rules of life, and of the Prophets*: *Of the church*: *A Discourse of the Lord's-day*: *Another of the nature of man, and of his formation*: *Of the obedience of the senses to faith*: *Of the soul and body, or of the mind*: *Concerning baptism*: *Of truth, and of faith, and the generation of Jesus Christ*: *His book of prophecie, and of hospitality*: *And the Key, and of the Devil, and* (*m*) *the Revelation of John*." Another book, the title (*n*) of which I do not translate, because

*Revela-  
tion.*

(*k*) *Ann. Polit. Ec.* 177. §. 3.

(*l*) *H. E.* l. iv. c. 26. p. 146. 147.

(*m*) Καὶ τὰ περὶ τοῦ διαβόλου, καὶ τῆς ἀποκαλύψεως Ἰωάννου.

(*n*) Καὶ ὁ περὶ ἐνσωμάτων θεῶν.

Ch  
beca  
" A  
By  
Apo  
S  
Mel  
Euse  
selve  
them  
few  
It  
leng  
work  
stian  
ing t  
the  
ed, v  
it wa  
is pla  
very  
it ver  
canon

(o) S  
bric. G  
(p)  
(q)  
Johanni  
intero

because (o) the meaning of it is doubtful. *A. D.*

"And lastly, his little book to Antonine."

177.

By which *Eusebe* means his forementioned Apologie.

St. *Jerome* (p) gives also a catalogue of *Melito's* works, in the main agreeable to *Eusebe*. We need not here concern ourselves about some little differences between them, These books are all lost, except a few fragments.

It was not amiss to put down here at length the titles of all this good man's works, to shew the diligence of our *Christian* ancestors. But the only piece belonging to our present design is that concerning the *Revelation of John*. What it contain-  
ed, we are not informed. *Mill* (q) says, *Revela-  
tion.* it was a Commentarie upon that book. It is plain, he ascribed that book to *John*, and very likely, to *John* the Apostle. I think it very probable, he esteemed it a book of canonical authority.

There

(o) See *Tillemont*, as before, in *Meliton*. Note 3. et *Fabric. Gr. V. v.* and the references there.

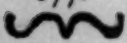
(p) *De V. I. cap. 24.*

(q) *Melito* vero *Sardensis Ecclesiae* (ad quem quintam *Johannis*, cap. 3. *Apoc. epistolam* datam aiunt) episcopus integro eam commentario illustravit. *Prolegom. n. 227.*



A. D.

177.

Old Testa-  
ment.New Te-  
stament.

There is nothing in the fragment of his Apologie preserved by *Eusebe* to be inserted here. But in his preface to his extracts *out of the Law and the Prophets* is a short passage, which I shall put down in this place: having only first observed, that (r) *Eusebe* professes there to give us the passage he alleges word for word. It is a letter to one *Onesimus*, to whom *Melito* says: “ When (s) therefore I went into the East, and was come to the place where those things were preached and done; I procured an accurate account of the books of the Old Testament, the catalogue of which I have here subjoined, and sent to you. Their names are these.”

From this passage I would conclude, that there was then also a volume or collection of books, called the *New Testament*, containing the writings of Apostles and Apostolical men: But we cannot from hence infer the names, or the exact number of those books.

*Melito*

(r) Ἐχοντα ἐπὶ λέξεως οὕτως. p. 148. D.

(s) Ἀνελθὼν οὖν εἰς τὴν ἀνατολήν, καὶ ἕως τοῦ τόπου γενομένου ἐνθα ἐκηρύχθη καὶ ἐπράχθη, καὶ ἀκριβῶς μαθὼν τὰ τῆς παλαιᾶς διαθήκης βιβλία, ὑποτάξας ἐπεμψά σοι. Ibid. p. 149. A.

I. Chap. XV. MELITO.

331

*Melito* then received the book of the *Revelation*, writ by *John* : and it is probable, <sup>177.</sup> many other books, collected together in a volume, called the *New Testament* : just as the books received by the *Jews*, as of Divine authority, were called the *Old Testament*.



CHAP.



## CHAP. XVI.

### *The* EPISTLE *of the churches of* VIENNE *and* LYONS.

A. D. 177. **I**N<sup>o</sup> the time of *Marc Antonine* the *Chris-*  
*tians* suffered extremely. “ In the se-  
‘ venteenth year of the reign of this Prince,  
‘ says *Eusebe* (a) in his Ecclesiastical Histo-  
‘ rie, the persecution against us raged with  
‘ great violence in several parts of the world,  
‘ through the enmity of the people in the ci-  
‘ ties. What vast multitudes of Martyrs  
‘ there were throughout the whole em-  
‘ pire, may be well concluded from what  
‘ happened in one nation.” He means that  
of *Gaul*. The persecution was particularly  
violent at *Lyons* and the countrey thereabout.  
At this time many of the *Christians* of *Lyons*  
and *Vienne* suffered exquisite torments with  
the greatest patience. *Pothinus* Bishop of  
*Lyons*, then above ninety years of age, was  
apprehended and carried before the Gover-  
nour,

(a) L. v. *Prooem.*

nour, by whom he was examined, and before whom he made a generous confession of the *Christian* religion. And having suffered many indignities, he was sent to prison, where he soon expired.

A. D.

177.

The time of the persecution in *Gaul* has been disputed. Some have argued for the year 167, thinking that *Eusebe* himself places it there in his *Chronicle*. *Dodwell* (b) has defended this opinion with his usual diligence. But the general opinion is with *Eusebe* in his *Ecclesiastical Historie*, who, as we have just shewed, there places it in the seventeenth year of *Marc Antonine*, the 177. of our Lord. Supposing, that *Eusebe* had in his *Chronicle* placed it in the seventh of that Emperour, it would nevertheless be more reasonable for us to adhere to the account in the *Ecclesiastical Historie*, writ after his *Chronicle*: where he gives the most particular account of the sufferings of these *Christians*. But indeed *Eusebe* does not disagree with himself. The *Christians* suffered in one part or other of the world from almost the begining of *Marc's* reign to the end of it. In his *Chronicle* *Eusebe* assigns the fourth  
persec-

(b) Diff. *Cypr.* xi. §. 36.



A. D.

177.

persecution to the seventh year of that Emperour, because some suffered then: and upon that occasion he makes a general mention of the *Martyrs of Lyons*. But the persecution of the churches in *Gaul* did not happen until the seventeenth year of *Marc*, as *Eusebe* particularly relates in his *Historie*. But I need not farther insist upon this point. The probability of the later date of the persecution in *Gaul* has been so well argued, the invalidity of *Dodwell's* arguments so fully shewn, and every difficulty so fairly considered and removed by *Pagi* (c) and (d) *Tillemont*; that I think, every unprejudiced person must acquiesce. Nor do I expect, that any learned man, who has a concern for his reputation as a critic, should attempt a direct confutation of this opinion.

The churches of *Lyons* and *Vienne* sent a relation of the sufferings of their Martyrs to the churches of *Asia* and *Phrygia*. *Eusebe* (e) placed this Epistle entire in his collection of the *Acts of the Martyrs*. And he has also inserted a large part of it into his *Ecclesiastical*

(c) *Critic. in Baron.* 177. §. 3—7.

(d) *Memoires Eccles.* Tom. 3. St. Potbin, et les Martyrs de Lion. Art. ii. et Note i.

(e) Vid. H. E. l. v. Proem.

Chap. XVI. of VIENNE and LYONS. 335

*fastical Historie*, which we still have. It is *A. D.*  
the finest thing of the kind in all antiquity. <sup>177.</sup>  
Some think it was composed by *Irenaeus*.

There were at the same time some other letters dispatched from these churches, concerning the affair of *Montanism*, which having had it's rise about the year 171, began now to make a noise in the world. One of these letters likewise was sent to the brethren in *Asia* and *Phrygia*, another to *Eleutherus* Bishop of *Rome*. These letters concerning the pretended prophecies of *Montanus* were written by the Martyrs (*f*) themselves, when in prison, before they were brought forth to be put to death. Of these letters there is little remaining. But the former, containing the *relation* of the sufferings of the Martyrs at *Lyons*, being for the main part of it preserved in *Eusebe*, will afford a considerable testimonie to the books of the New Testament. And how valuable their testimonie is, must be manifest from what has been said of them: and that they had for their Bishop *Pothinus*, who died aged above 90, in the year 177, and was born therefore about the year 87. of our Lord.

We

(*f*) *Eus.* H. E. l. v. c. iv. fin. v. in.

336 *The EPISTLE of the churches* Book I.

*A. D.* We shall make frequent mention, in the  
 177. course of this work, of this Epistle of the  
 churches of *Vienne* and *Lyons*. I am now  
 to exhibit only the *testimonie* it affords to the  
*books of the New Testament*.

N. T.

*The epistle, &c.*

*Luke.*

I. Luke i. 6. *And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord, blameless.*

I. Of one of their brethren they say: "That (g) though young, he equalled the character of old *Zacharias*: For he walked in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord, blameless."

*John.*

II. John xvi. 2. *Yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you, will think that he doth God service.*

II. Then was (b) fulfilled, that which was spoken by the Lord, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doth God service.

*Aas.*

III. Acts vii. 60. *And he kneeled down,*

III. "They prayed (i) for those from and

(g) *Euf. H. E. l. v. cap. i. p. 155. D. vid. et p. 156. A. B.*

(b) *Ibid. p. 157. A.*

(i) *p. 167. A.*

Ch  
and  
voice  
this  
charg

I n  
words  
are ex  
nal in

IV.  
For I  
the suff  
present  
worthie  
pared  
that sh  
in us.

(k) "ΟΤ  
σηματα  
την μέλλ  
αυθινας

Chap. XVI. of VIENNE and LYONS. 337

and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. whom they suffered hard things, as did the perfect Martyr Stephen : Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And if he prayed for those that stoned him, how much more ought we to pray for the brethren?"

I may be allowed to observe here, that the words of these Greek quotations, or references, are exactly conformable to the Greek original in our copies.

N. T.

The epistle, &c.

IV. Rom. viii. 18.

IV. Shewing in- Romans,

For I reckon, that (k) the sufferings of this present time are not worthie to be compared with the glorie that shall be revealed in us. deed, that (l) the sufferings of this present time are not worthie to be compared with the glorie that shall be revealed in us.

Z

Here

(k) "Οτι ἐν ἀξία τὰ παθήματα τῶ νῦν καιρῷ, πρὸς τὴν μέλλουσαν δόξαν ἀποκαλυφθῆναι εἰς ἡμᾶς.

(l) "Οτι ἐν ἀξία τὰ παθήματα τῶ νῦν καιρῷ, πρὸς τὴν μέλλουσαν δόξαν ἀποκαλυφθῆναι εἰς ἡμᾶς. p. 155. B.



A. D.

177.

1 and 2  
Corinth.

Here is also an exact agreement in the very words, and it is remarkable.

V. "Then they (*m*) came to *Blandina*, by whom Christ shewed, that those things, which to men appear mean, obscure, and contemptible, are greatly honored by God, for the love toward him, shewn in power, not boasted of in appearance." Here may be an allusion to 1 Cor. i. 25—21. and 2 Cor. v. 12.

N. T.

The epistle, &amp;c.

Ephes.

VI. Eph. vi. 5.

VI. For when (*n*)

*Servants, be obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh.*

we were all afraid on her account, and [especially] her fleshly mistress.

Philip.

VII. Philip. ii. 6.

VII. Who (*o*) also

*Who being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal to God.*

were so far followers and imitators of Christ: *Who being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal to God.*

One would be almost apt to think, that these

(*m*) p. 157. B.(*n*) Ibid.

(*o*) "Οι καὶ ἐπὶ τούτῳ ζηλοῦνται καὶ μιμνῶνται Χριστῷ ἐγένετο, ἵνα ἐν μορφῇ Θεοῦ ὑπάρχων ἐχάρπαγμα ἦν ἵνα τὸ εἶναι ἴσῃ  
εἰς αὐτόν. p. 166. B.

Ch  
the  
Dia  
be e  
left  
The  
Unl  
thes  
lows  
derst  
Lore  
some  
at le  
hum

V  
15.  
churo  
God,  
groun  
See 1  
IX  
4.—  
absta  
whic  
ted  
with

(p)

Chap. XVI. of VIENNE and LYONS: 339

these churches understood this text thus: A. D.

*Did not think it a thing to be caught at, to* <sup>177.</sup>

*be equal, or like, to God.* They seem at  
 left to use the last words in that sense.  
 They are not to their purpose in any other:  
 Unless we should suppose, that by reciting  
 these they intend to refer to what there fol-  
 lows. But I think, that if they had not un-  
 derstood these words to be expressive of our  
 Lord's humility, they would have proceeded  
 somewhat farther in that portion of scripture;  
 at least so far as to mention one branch of the  
 humility of our Blessed Lord.

N. T.

*The epistle, &c.*

VIII. 1 Tim. iii.

VIII. "*Attalus*— 1 Tim.

15. *Which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.*

who (p) was alwaies the pillar and ground of the Christians there."

See Rev. iii. 12.

IX. 1 Tim. iv. 3.

IX. *Alcibiades* liv-

4.—*commanding to abstain from meats, which God bath created to be received with thanksgiving.* —

ed upon bread and water in prison. *At- talus* declared, "It was (q) revealed to him, that *Alcibiades*

Z 2

For

(p) p. 157. B.

(q) p. 167. D.

340 *The* EPISTLE *of the churches* Book I.

*A* *D.* For every creature of *did not do well in*  
<sup>177.</sup> *God is good, and no-* *not using the crea-*  
*thing to be refused, if* *tures of God, — and*  
*it be received with* *Alcibiades was per-*  
*thanksgiving. See al-* *suaded, and partook*  
*so Rom. xiv. 2.* *of all things promif-*  
*cuously, and gave*  
*God thanks."*

*1 Peter.* X. *1 Pet. v. 6.* X. They (s) hum-  
*Humble (r) yourselves* *bled themselves under*  
*therefore under the* *the mighty hand, by*  
*mighty hand of God,* *which they are now*  
*that he may exalt you* *proportionably exalt-*  
*in due time.* *ed.*

XI. There is likewise, I think, [p. 160. B. C.] an allusion to *1 Pet. iv. 14. 15. 16.* But the passage being somewhat long, and this being a plain allusion to that epistle, I forbear putting it down.

N. T. *The epistle, &c.*

*1 John.* XII. *1 John iii.* XII. Which he ma-  
*16. Hereby perceive* *nifested by the abun-*  
*we the love of God,* *dance of his love, for*  
*because*

(r) Γαπεινάθητε οὖν ὑπὸ τὴν κρατὰν χεῖρα τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἵνα ὑμεῖς ὑψώσῃ ἐν καιρῷ.

(s) Ἐταπείνω ἑαυτὸς ὑπὸ τὴν κραταίαν χεῖρα, ἵνα ἡμεῖς ὑμεῖς ὑψώσῃ ἐν καιρῷ. p. 166. D.

# Chap. XVI. of VIENNE and LYONS. 341

because he laid down (u) he was willing in A. D. 177.  
his life for us. And defense of the brethren  
(t) we ought to lay to lay down even his  
down our lives for the own life.  
brethren.

XIII. Rev. xiv. 4. XIII. For he was *Revela-*  
*tion.*  
These are (x) they, indeed a genuine dis-  
which follow the ciple of Christ, (y)  
lamb whithersoever he following the lamb  
goes. whithersoever he goes.

XIV. The passages alleged out of this epi- *The sum of*  
stle have a reference to the Gospels of St. *their testi-*  
*monie.*  
Luke, and St. John, the Acts of the Apostles,  
the epistle to the Romans, the first and second  
to the Corinthians, the epistles to the Ephe-  
sians, and the Philippians, the first to Timo-  
thie, the first of St. Peter, the first of St.  
John, and the book of the Revelation:  
most of which will be readily allowed to  
be good references. But there is not any  
book of the New Testament expressly quot-  
ed in this epistle. However, a text of John

Z 3 is

(r) Καὶ ἡμεῖς ὀφείλομεν  
ὑπὲρ τῶν ἀδελφῶν τὰς ψυχὰς  
τιθέναι.

(x) Οὗτοί εἰσιν οἱ ἀκολουθῶν-  
τες τῷ ἀρνίῳ ὅπου ἂν ὑπάγῃ.

(u) Ἐυδοκήσας ὑπὲρ τῆς  
τῶν ἀδελφῶν ἀπολογίας καὶ  
τὴν ἑαυτοῦ θείναι ψυχὴν.  
p. 156. A. B.

(v) Ἀκολουθῶν τῷ ἀρνίῳ  
ὅπου ἂν ὑπάγῃ. p. 156. B.

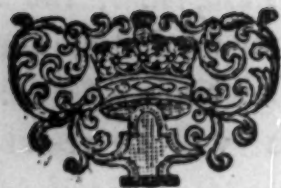


*A. D.* is referred to as containing words of *the*  
 177. *Lord.*

*Ruinart* (z) in his edition of this epistle has put down in the margin *Rev. xxii. 11.* against these words: "That the scripture might be fulfilled, *Let the wicked be wicked still, and the righteous be righteous still.*" But I rather think they refer to *Dan. xii. 11.* which is set by *Valesius* in the margin (a) of *Eusebe* over-against those words.

(z) *Aët. Martyr.* p. 69;

(a) p. 165.



C H A P.

I. 7

alrea  
Poly



C H A P. XVII.

St. I R E N A E U S.

- I. *His Historie, Time, Works, and Character.* II. *His Testimonie to the Scriptures of the New Testament, particularly to the Gospels.* III. *The Acts of the Apostles.* IV. *St. Paul's Epistles,* V. *The Catholic Epistles.* VI. *The Revelation.* VII. *An Observation.* VIII. *A summarie Account of the Books of the New Testament received by Him.* IX. *Titles and Divisions of the Books of Scripture.* X. *Respect for the Scriptures.* XI. *Of Reading the Scriptures.* XII. *Whether he received any other Writings, as of Authority.* XIII. *Upon what Grounds he received the Gospels of St. Mark, and St. Luke, and the Acts of the Apostles.*

I. **T**HE age and authority of Irenaeus, <sup>A. D.</sup>  
Bishop of Lyons in Gaul, have been <sup>178.</sup>  
already shewn in part in the historie of St. <sup>His Historie,</sup>  
Polycarp. His countrey is not certainly  
known.

*A. D.* 178. known. But it is probable from his name, that he was a *Greek*: and from his early acquaintance with St. *Polycarp*, that he was of *Asia*. It is likewise probable, that he was from the beginning educated in the Christian Religion. When he came into *Gaul*, is unknown. Some have supposed, that he came to *Rome* with St. *Polycarp*, in the time of *Anicetus*, about the year 157, and from thence passed into *Gaul*. But concerning this we have no information in antiquity. And it is in vain to form conjectures.

Learned men are not entirely agreed about the time of *Irenaeus* himself, or of his principal work, *against heresies*. *Dodwell* (a) supposes he was born in the reign of *Nerva*, in the year 97: wrote (b) his books against Heresies in 176. or 177. and did not (c) outlive the year 190. *Grabe* (d) is unwilling to differ from *Dodwell*, but thinks, *Irenaeus* was not born till about the year 108. and speaks dubiously about the time of writing the work against heresies. *Du Pin* (e) says, *Irenaeus* was born in the later part of the reign of *Adrian*,

(a) *Diff. Irenae.* 3. §. 4.

(b) *Diff.* 4. §. 41.

(c) *Diff.* 3. §. 29.

(d) *Prolegomena de vit. et script. Irenasi.* §. 1. 2.

(e) *Nouv. Bibl. Irenae.*

(f) *D*

(b) *M*

(i) *Ibi*

(k) *A*

(l) —

explorato

*Adrian*, or the begining of that of *Anto-* *A. D.*  
*nine*, a little before the year 140. and died a *178.*  
 Martyr in 202. *Massuet* (*f*) differs little  
 from him, supposing, that *Irenaeus* was born  
 in the year 140. and died in 202; and that  
 he wrote (*g*) the forementioned work about  
 the year 192. *Tillemont* (*b*) thinks, that  
*Irenaeus* was born about the year 120, and  
 died in 202. And that the (*i*) work against  
 heresies might be writ partly in the later end of  
 the time of *Eleutherus*; who died, accord-  
 ing to him, in 192: and the remaining part  
 in the time of his successor, *Victor*.

I shall now put down some few of the  
 testimonies of the ancients concerning this  
 Father, and then make some remarks.

The (*k*) *Martyrs of Lyons* in their letter to  
*Eleutherus* make a very honorable mention  
 of him, and give him the title of Presby-  
 ter.

*Tertullian* mentions him as one of the  
 most considerable writers of the Christian  
 church, and says, (*l*) he was a *diligent en-*  
*quirer*

(*f*) *Dissertat.* ii. §. 2.

(*g*) *Ibid.* §. 47.

(*b*) *Mem. Eccl. Irenée, article* ii.

(*i*) *Ibid. artic.* 7.

(*k*) *Apud Euf. H. E. l. v. c. 4.*

(*l*) — ut *Irenaeus omnium doctrinarum curiosissimus*  
*explorator. Contra Valentin. c. v.*



<sup>A. D.</sup>  
<sup>178.</sup> *quirer of all sorts of opinions.* He means, it is likely, that *Irenaeus* had well studied the sentiments of the Heathen Philosophers, and of Heretics, as well as the principles of the Christian Religion.

*Eusebe* says: "When (m) *Pothinus* had been put to death with the Martyrs in *Gaul*, *Irenaeus* succeeded him in the Bishoprick of the church of *Lyons*; who in his youth had been a disciple of *Polycarp*." He there observes likewise, that his book against Heresies was writ, when *Eleutherus* was Bishop of *Rome*.

Of the works of *Irenaeus* *Eusebe* has made this mention in several places: "*Irenaeus* (n) wrote, says he, several letters against those which at *Rome* corrupted the true doctrine of the church: One to *Blastus* concerning schism; another to *Florinus*, concerning the monarchie; or, that God is not the author of evil;—and concerning the number eight." Again: Beside (o) the treatises and epistles of *Irenaeus* already mentioned, there is extant a short, but very necessarie discourse of his against the Gentils, entitled, *Concerning knowledge*; another

(m) H. E. l. v. p. 170.

(n) *Cap.* 20.

(o) *Cap.* 26;

' ther  
' nus,  
' lical  
' dispu  
' mak

' bre: v  
' Solon  
' them  
of a  
cerning  
celebra  
in the  
whom

he has  
sages ou

It is  
had ob  
scriptur  
already  
brews.

He (  
book of  
gelists,  
*Eusebe* t  
' thus d  
' and th

(p) *Cap.*  
(q) L. v.

‘ ther inscribed to a brother named *Marcia-* A. D.  
178.  
‘ *nus*, being a *Demonstration of the Aposto-*  
‘ *lical preaching*; and a little book of *divers*  
‘ *disputations*, [or discourses] in which he  
‘ makes mention of the epistle to the *He-*  
‘ *brews*, and the book called the *Wisdom of*  
‘ *Solomon*, alleging some passages out of  
‘ them.” *Eusebe* (p) also gives an account  
of a letter to *Victor* Bishop of *Rome* con-  
cerning the controverſie about the time of  
celebrating *Easter*: which he ſays was writ  
in the name of the brethren in *Gaul*, over  
whom he preſided. And beſide all theſe,  
he has moreover quoted divers (q) large paſ-  
ſages out of the work *Againſt Heresies*.

It is proper to ſhew here what *Eusebe*  
had obſerved in his works, concerning the  
ſcriptures of the N. T. beſide what has been  
already ſaid relating to the epistle to the *He-*  
*brews*.

He (r) firſt takes a paſſage from the third  
book of *Irenaeus* concerning the four Evan-  
gelists, which will be found at length below.  
*Eusebe* then proceeds: “ In his fifth book he  
‘ thus diſcourſes of the Revelation of *John*,  
‘ and the computation of the name of *Anti-*  
‘ *christ*.”

(p) *Cap. 24. p. 192. C. D.*

(q) *L. v. c. 6. 7. 8.*

(r) *H. E. l. v. c. 8.*

A. D.  
178.

*christ. These things being thus, and this number being in all the exact and ancient copies, and they who saw John attesting the same things, and reason teaching us, that the number of the name of the beast, according to the computation of the Greeks is expressed by the letters contained in it. And a little after of the same matter he says: We therefore will not run the hazard of affirming any thing too positively of the name of Antichrist. For if his name were to have been openly declared at this time, it would have been mentioned by him who saw the Revelation. For it was not seen long agoe, but almost in our age near the end of the reign of Domitian. He also mentions the first epistle of John, alleging many testimonies out of it. He also in like manner mentions the former [epistle] of Peter."*

It is perhaps needless to put down after these St. Jerome's testimonie. I shall however take a part of his account of this excellent person, which we have in his Book of (s) *Illustrious Men*.

"Irenaeus, Presbyter of Potbinus, who was Bishop of the church of Lyons in Gaul,

carried

(s) Cap. 35.

Chap

' carr

' conc

' Elea

' ter

' ward

' of n

' ty ye

' room

' Poly

' five

others,

ble to

' chief

' succe

Thos

sent to

the birt

reason

Polycarp

under P

in the y

thinus in

antiquity

frequent

(t) Quem

rat ab his q

Adv. H. I.

alibi.

‘ carried a letter from the Martyrs of that city  
 ‘ concerning some disputes of the church to  
 ‘ *Eleutherus* Bishop of *Rome*, in which let-  
 ‘ ter he is honorably mentioned. After-  
 ‘ wards, *Pothinus* having obtained the crown  
 ‘ of martyrdom, when he was almost nine-  
 ‘ ty years of age, he was substituted in his  
 ‘ room. It is certain, he was disciple of  
 ‘ *Polycarp*, Bishop and Martyr. He wrote  
 ‘ five books against Heresies:” and divers  
 others, which *Jerome* there mentions agreea-  
 ble to *Eusebe*. He concludes: “ He flourished  
 ‘ chiefly under the Emperour *Commodus*, who  
 ‘ succeeded *M. Antoninus Verus*.”

Though then it is not in our power at present to determine exactly the time, either of the birth or death of *Irenaeus*; we have good reason to believe, he was a disciple of St. *Polycarp*, Presbyter in the church of *Lyons* under *Pothinus*, whose martyrdom happened in the year 177. and that he succeeded *Pothinus* in the Bishoprick of that church. His antiquity is farther confirmed from the (t) frequent mention he makes of a Presbyter, who

(t) Quemadmodum audiui a quodam presbytero, qui audierat ab his qui Apostolos viderant, et ab his qui didicerant. Adv. H. l. iv. c. 27. §. 1. *Massuet*. [al. c. 45. in.] et alibi.



A. D.  
178.

who had conversed with the immediate successors of the Apostles. But who this was, cannot be determined; whether *Papias*, whom he has quoted by name, or *Pothinus*, or some other. *Eusebe*, who also has particularly taken notice of this, says: “ *Irenaeus* ‘ (u) has mentioned the sayings of a certain ‘ Apostolical Presbyter, without telling us ‘ his name, and puts down his expositions of ‘ the Divine Scriptures.”

As for the time of writing his five books against heresies, it is the opinion of divers learned men, that they were not writ and published all together, but rather at some distance of time. In his very (x) first book he gives an account of the heresies of *Tatian*, who is not supposed to have left the Catholic church before the year 172. In his third (y) book he expressly mentions *Eleutherus*, as being then the twelfth Bishop of *Rome*. He also speaks (z) of the translation of *Theodotion*, which is generally allowed to have been published in the reign of *Commodus*. These are some notes of time, that are commonly insisted on. But I shall not attempt to settle exactly

(u) *Eus. H. E. l. v. c. 8. p. 173. C.*

(x) *L. i. cap. 31. al. 28.*

(y) *L. 3. c. 3.*

(z) *L. 3. c. 24. al. 21.*

Chap  
exact  
comp  
proba  
after  
near t  
cularl  
178 :  
his fiv  
lished

It is  
Marty  
and *Eu*  
ter, it  
*Bashag*  
good g  
The

*naeus*,  
and fra  
those F  
in Gree  
tin Ver  
served l  
who ha

*Irena*  
work *A*  
Heathen

(a) *Hij*  
(c) *Vid.*

## Chap. XVII. St. IRENAEUS.

251

exactly the year, in which this work was compleated. It seems to me however most probable, that it was not writ till some time after he was Bishop. That he may stand near those *Christians*, to whom he was particularly related, I shall place him in the year 178: though I am rather inclined to think, his five books *Against Heresies* were not published quite so soon.

A. D.

178.

It is commonly said, that *Irenaeus* died a Martyr. But from the silence of *Tertullian*, and *Eusebe*, and others, concerning this matter, it is justly argued by (a) *Carve*, and (b) *Basnage*, and (c) *Dodwell*, that there is no good ground for that supposition.

There is nothing now remaining of *Irenaeus*, beside his five books *Against Heresies*, and fragments of some other pieces. And those Five Books, which were writ by him in *Greek*, are extant only in an ancient *Latin* Version, excepting some fragments preserved by *Eusebe*, and other *Greek* writers, who have quoted them.

*Irenaeus* has shewn himself in this large work *Against Heresies*, well acquainted with Heathen Authors, and the absurd and intricate

(a) *Hist. Lit. in Irenae.*

(b) *Annal. 194. §. 4.*

(c) *Vid. Diff. iii. in Iren. cap. xxi.*

*A. D.* cate notions of heretics, as well as with the  
 178. scriptures of the Old and New Testament.  
 He was at the same time a very humble modest man, and agreeable to his name, a lover of peace: as appears from his letter (d) to *Victor*, on occasion of the controverſie about the time of keeping *Easter*.

*Photius* (e) indeed ſays of him, that in ſome of his writings he weakens the certain truth of the doctrines of the Church by falſe reasonings. However, he at the ſame time calls him *the* (f) *Divine Irenaeus*, But I ſhall not now offer a particular apologie for any of thoſe reasonings, to which *Photius* may be ſuppoſed to refer. *Irenaeus*, though his writings may not be free from imperfections, has given ſuch proofs of learning, integrity, and good ſenſe in the main, that all good judges muſt eſteem him, (as doubtleſs *Photius* did,) an ornament to the ſect he was of.

Of the  
 N. T.

II. I ſhall now ſhew particularly, how the *books of the New Testament* are quoted by him.

I. The

(d) *Euf. H. E. l. v. c. 24.*

(e) Εἰ καὶ ἐν τισὶν αὐτῶν ἡ τῆς κατὰ τὰ ἐκκλησιαστικὰ λόγ-  
 ματα ἀληθείας ἀκρίβεια νόθοις λογισμοῖς κινδυνεύεται. Cod.  
 120.

(f) Τῷ Θεοπεσίῳ Εἰρηναίῳ.

cerning  
 them,  
 having  
 the doc  
 having  
 it down

" Fo

' the kn  
 ' by an  
 ' gospe  
 ' gospe  
 ' by the  
 ' that i  
 ' dation  
 ' after t  
 ' they[t  
 ' with t  
 ' down  
 ' knowl  
 ' forth t  
 ' ring to  
 ' having  
 ' gospe  
 ' the Je  
 ' guage,





A. D.

178.

ing the gospel at *Rome*, and founding a church there. And (b) after their exit [death, or departure] *Mark* also, the disciple and interpreter of *Peter*, delivered to us in writing the things that had been preached by *Peter*. And *Luke* the companion of *Paul*, put down in a book the gospel preached by him. [*Paul*.] Afterwards *John*, the disciple of the Lord, who also leaned upon his breast, he likewise published a Gospel, while he dwelt at *Ephesus* in *Asia*. And all these have delivered to us, that there is one God the maker of the heaven and the earth, declared by the Law and the Prophets, and one Christ the Son of God. And he who does not assent to them, despiseth (i) indeed those who knew the mind of the Lord: but he despiseth also Christ himself the Lord, and he despiseth likewise the Father, and is self-condemned, resisting and opposing his own salvation, as all heretics do."

That part of this passage, which particularly concerns the four Evangelists severally,

is

(b) Μετὰ δὲ τὴν τότεν ἔξοδον. Μάρκος ὁ μαθητὴς καὶ ἑρμηνευτὴς Πέτρου, καὶ αὐτὸς τὰ ὑπὸ Πέτρῳ κηρυσσόμενα ἐγγράφως ἡμῖν παραδίδωκε· καὶ Λουκᾶς δὲ ὁ ἀκόλουθος Παύλου, τὸ ὅτι ἐκεῖνος κηρυσσόμενον εὐαγγέλιον ἐν βιβλίῳ κατέθετο.

(i) Spernit quidem participes Domini.

Cha

is cit

old L

2.

' Go

' regi

' foun

' spre

' the

' the

' it sh

' fides

' kind,

' Wor

' upon

' havin

' Gosp

' in on

' to Jo

' gener

' ing w

' accord

' racter,

(k) H. E.

(l) Nequ

pauciora cap

[Apud Gra

(A) Thon

Gospel men

iii. 23. to t

is cited by (k) *Eusebe* : the rest is only in the old *Latin* version.

A. D.

178.

2. “ Nor (l) can there be more or fewer  
 ‘ Gospels than these. For as there are four  
 ‘ regions of the world in which we live, and  
 ‘ four catholic spirits, and the church is  
 ‘ spread all over the earth, and the gospel is  
 ‘ the pillar and foundation of the church, and  
 ‘ the spirit of life : in like manner was it fit,  
 ‘ it should have four pillars, breathing on all  
 ‘ sides incorruption, and refreshing man-  
 ‘ kind. Whence it is manifest, that the  
 ‘ Word the former of all things, who sits  
 ‘ upon the Cherubim, and upholds all things,  
 ‘ having appeared to men, has given us a  
 ‘ Gospel of a fourfold character, but joined  
 ‘ in one spirit. . . . . The Gospel according  
 ‘ to *John* declares his primarie and glorious  
 ‘ generation from the Father : *In the begin-*  
 ‘ *ing was the Word.* . . . . But the Gospel  
 ‘ according to *Luke*, being of a priestly cha-  
 ‘ racter, begins (A) with *Zacharias* the

A a 2

‘ priest

(k) H. E. l. v. c. 8.

(l) Neque autem plura numero quam haec sunt, neque pauciora capit esse evangelia, &c. Lib. 3. cap. xi. §. 8. [Apud *Grabe*. p. 221.]

(A) Though *Irenaeus* does not in this account of St. *Luke*’s Gospel mention his genealogie of our Lord, which is in ch. iii. 23. to the end ; he owned it, and has particularly ob- served

A. D.  
178.

‘ priest offering incense to God. . . . *Matthew*  
 ‘ relates his generation, which is according to  
 ‘ man : *The book of the generation of Jesus*  
 ‘ *Christ, the son of David, the son of Abra-*  
 ‘ *ham. . . . Mark begins from the prophe-*  
 ‘ *tic Spirit, which came down from above*  
 ‘ to men, saying : *The beginning of the gospel*  
 ‘ *of Jesus Christ, as it is written in Esaias*  
 ‘ *the Prophet.*”

In these passages we see the number of Gospels owned by *Irenaeus*, and the names of the writers of them, and sufficient particulars concerning them, to satisfy us, he means the very same books of the Gospels, which we now have. Nevertheless I shall take a passage or two more concerning each of these Gospels.

*Matthew.* 3. The first passage will relate to *Matthew's* Gospel from a fragment (m) of *Irenaeus*.

“ The Gospel according to *Matthew* was  
 ‘ writ to the *Jews*. For they earnestly de-  
 ‘ fired a *Messiah* of the seed of *David*. And  
 ‘ *Matthew* having also the same desire to a  
 ‘ yet

served, that St. *Luke* carried up our Saviour's genealogie to *Adam*. L. 3. cap. 22. §. 3. [al. cap. 33.]

(m) *E. Possini catena Patrum in Matthaeum ; apud Massuet.*  
 P. 347. *Grabe*, p. 471.

(n) Lib.  
 (o) L. 3  
 (p) Bec  
 pu'es; ow

‘ yet greater degree, strove by all means to <sup>A. D.</sup>  
 ‘ give them full satisfaction, that *Christ* was <sup>178.</sup>  
 ‘ of the seed of *David*. Wherefore he be-  
 ‘ gan with his genealogie.”

4. “ Wherefore (n) also *Mark*, the inter- *Mark*.  
 ‘ preter and follower of *Peter*, makes this  
 ‘ the begining of his evangelic writing:  
 ‘ *The begining of the Gospel of Jesus Christ*  
 ‘ *the Son of God*. . . . . And in the end of  
 ‘ the [his] Gospel *Mark* says: *So then the*  
 ‘ *Lord Jesus, after he had spoken to them,*  
 ‘ *was received up into heaven, and sate on the*  
 ‘ *right hand of God*.”

5. “ But if any (o) one rejects *Luke*, as *Luke*.  
 ‘ if he did not know the truth, he will be  
 ‘ convicted of throwing away the Gospel,  
 ‘ of which he professeth (B) to be a disciple.  
 ‘ For there are many, and those very neces-  
 ‘ sarie parts of the gospel, which we know  
 ‘ by his means: as, the birth of *John*, the  
 ‘ historie of *Zacharias*, and the visit of the *Luke i. ii.*  
 ‘ angel to *Marie*, and the descent of the an- <sup>iii.</sup>  
 ‘ gels to the shepherds, and the things said  
 ‘ by them, and the testimonie of *Anna* and

A a 3

‘ *Simeon*

(n) Lib. 3. c. x. §. 6. [ed *Grabe* p. 217.]

(o) L. 3. c. xiv. §. 3. [Grabe p. 235.]

(B) Because the heretics, with whom *Irenaeus* there dis-  
 putes; owned the whole, or part at least, of that Gospel.



- A. D. 178. *Simeon* to Christ, and that at the age of twelve years he was left behind at *Jerusalem*, and the baptism of *John*, and the age of our Lord when he was baptised, and that this was done in the fifteenth year of *Tiberius Caesar*, and what he said in his sermon to the rich: *Woe unto you that are rich, for ye receive your consolation. . . . .*
- Luke vi. 24. 25. 26. *All these things we know from Luke only. And we have learned from him many actions of our Lord, which (c) all receive: as, the great multitude of fishes which they who were with Peter enclosed, when at the command of the Lord they cast their*
- Ch. xiii. 11. *nets: and the woman with the infirmity of eighteen years, who was cured on the sabbath day, and the man with the dropsie, whom the Lord healed on the sabbath day, and how he defended his healing on that day: and how he taught his disciples not*
- xiv. 1. *to covet the chief seats: and that we ought to invite the poor and infirm, who cannot recompense us again: and of him who*
- ver. 12. *knocked at the door in the night time for bread, and obtained it, because of his im-*
- Ch. xi. 5. *portunity:*

(c) That is, parts of his Gospel received by all; heretics, as well as catholics. *Et plurimos aetius Domini per hunc didicimus, quibus omnes utuntur.*

'portunity: and that sitting at table at the <sup>A. D.</sup>  
 'house of a *Pharisee*, a woman that was a <sup>178.</sup>  
 'sinner kissed his feet, and anointed him with <sup>vii. 36.</sup>  
 'ointment, and all that for her sake the  
 'Lord said concerning two debtors: and <sup>xii. 16.</sup>  
 'the parable of the rich man that hoarded  
 'up his encrease, to whom also it was said:  
 '*This night shall thy soul be required of thee:*  
 '*then whose shall these things be, which thou*  
 '*hast provided?* As also the parable of the <sup>xvi. 19.</sup>  
 'rich man, that was clothed in purple, and  
 'fared sumptuously, and the beggar *Laza-*  
 '*rus*: and the answer which he made his <sup>xvii. 5.</sup>  
 'disciples, when they said to him: *En-*  
 '*crease our faith*: and the conversation with <sup>xix. 1.</sup>  
 '*Zaccheus* the Publican: and concerning the <sup>xviii. 10.</sup>  
 '*Pharisee* and the *Publican*, who worshiped  
 'together at the temple: and the ten lepers, <sup>xvii. 11.</sup>  
 'whom he healed at the same time in the  
 'way: and that he commanded the lame <sup>xiv. 21.</sup>  
 'and the blind to be brought to the wedding  
 'from the streets and the lanes: and the pa- <sup>xviii. 1.</sup>  
 'rable of the judge, who feared not God,  
 'whom the widow's importunity compelled  
 'to avenge her: and of the fig-tree in the <sup>xii. 6.</sup>  
 'vineyard, which bore no fruit. And many  
 'other things there are to be found in *Luke*  
 'alone, which [things] *Marcion* and *Valen-*

A. D. 178. *tinus* make use of. And beside all these things, after his resurrection, what he said to the disciples *in the way, and how he was made known to them in breaking of bread.*

*John.*

6. There is likewise a passage relating to *John's* Gospel, representing the design of it, which may deserve to be transcribed.

"*John (p)* the disciple of the Lord being desirous by declaring the Gospel to root out the error that had been sown in the minds of men by *Cerintus*, and a good while before by those who are called *Niccolaitans*, . . . . . that he might confute them, and satisfy all, that there is one God who made all things by his word; and not, as they say, one who made the world, and another the Father of the Lord: and one the son of the Creator, and another from the super-celestial places, even Christ, who they say also continued ever impassible, who descended upon Jesus the Son of the Creator, and fled away again into his *pleroma*. [or fullness]. . . . The disciple therefore of the Lord, willing at once to cut off these errors, and leave a rule

(p) L. 3. cap. xi. §. 3. *Massuet.* al. cap. xi. et apud *Grabe* p. 218.

‘ rule of truth in the church ; that there is A. D.  
178.  
‘ one God almighty, who by his word made  
‘ all things visible and invisible ; declaring  
‘ likewise, that by the word, by which God  
‘ finished the creation, by the same also he  
‘ bestowed salvation upon those men who  
‘ are in the creation ; he thus begins in his  
‘ doctrine, which is according to the gospel :  
‘ *In the beginning was the Word.* . . . . John i. 1.

So far of the Gospels. 5.

III. The *Acts of the Apostles* is a book Aa.  
much quoted by *Irenaeus*, as writ by *Luke*  
(*q*) the disciple and companion of the Apo-  
stles. There are few things recorded in that  
book, which have not been mentioned by  
*Irenaeus*. I shall put down one passage, giv-  
ing a general account of all the later part  
of it.

1. “ And that (*r*) *Luke* was inseparable  
‘ from *Paul*, and his fellow-worker in the  
‘ gospel, he himself shews, not boasting of  
‘ it indeed, but obliged to it for the sake of  
‘ truth. When *Barnabas*, and *John*, who  
‘ was called *Mark*, separated from *Paul*,  
‘ and

(*q*) Simon—de quo discipulus et sectator Apostolorum  
Lucas ait : *Vir quidam autem nomine Simon.* Act. viii. 9. et  
seq. Lib. i. cap. 23. §. 1. [al. cap. 20.]

(*r*) L. 3. cap. 14. init.



A. D.  
178.

Acts xv.

39.

Ch. xvi.

8. 9. 10.

11.

Ver. 13.

Ch. xx. 6.

xxi.

xxvii.

xxviii.

and they sailed to Cyprus, we came to Troas :  
 and when Paul had seen in a dream a man  
 of Macedonia, saying : Come over into Ma-  
 cedonia, and help us, Paul : immediatly,  
 says he, we endeavored to go into Macedo-  
 nia, assuredly gathering, that the Lord had  
 called us for to preach the gospel unto them.  
 Therefore loosing from Troas, we came in a  
 strait course to Samothracia. And then he  
 carefully relates the rest of their course to  
 Philippi, and how they began their preach-  
 ing there. And we sate down, says he, and  
 spake to the women that resorted thither :  
 [the place of prayer] relating also who be-  
 lieved, and how many. And again he  
 says : And we sailed away from Philippi  
 after the days of unleavened bread, and came  
 to Troas, where we abode seven days. And  
 the other things he relates, while he was  
 with Paul, mentioning exactly the places,  
 and cities, and number of days, untill they  
 went up to Jerusalem : and what things  
 happened there to Paul ; how he was sent  
 bound to Rome, and the name of the cen-  
 turion that took charge of him, and the  
 signs of the ship, and how they were ship-  
 wrecked, and in what island they were  
 saved, and how courteously they were re-  
 ceived,

Ch

' ce

' illa

' Pr

' an

' wh

' the

' tion

' con

' Ap

' him

this he

11. an

quotes

2.

behalf

disown

owned

cessity

authori

" N

' Paul

' sen to

' Luke

' to us

' [He r

' ing an

' cation,

‘ ceived, *Paul* healing the chief man of the *A. D.*  
 ‘ island, and how they sailed from thence to 178.  
 ‘ *Puteoli*, and from thence arrived at *Rome*,  
 ‘ and how long they staid at *Rome*. At all  
 ‘ which things he was present, and relates  
 ‘ them with fidelity, and without ostenta-  
 ‘ tion. . . . . And that he was not only a  
 ‘ companion, but also a fellow-laborer of the  
 ‘ Apostles, and especially of *Paul*, *Paul*  
 ‘ himself has declared in his epistles.” For  
 this he quotes the words of 2 *Tim.* iv. 9. 10.  
 11. and *Colos.* iv. 14, and presently after he  
 quotes also *Acts* xx. 17.

2. Beside these, and many other things in  
 behalf of *Luke*, he argues with those who  
 disowned the authority of *Paul*, and yet  
 owned *Luke*’s Gospel, that they must of ne-  
 cessity own the *Acts*, and consequently *Paul*’s  
 authority.

“ Nor can (s) they, *says he*, pretend, that  
 ‘ *Paul* is not an Apostle, when he was cho-  
 ‘ sen to this end: nor can they shew, that  
 ‘ *Luke* is not to be credited, who has related  
 ‘ to us the truth with the greatest exactness.  
 ‘ [He refers to *Acts* ix. 5. 15. 16. contain-  
 ‘ ing an account of *Paul*’s conversion and vo-  
 ‘ cation, which he had just before quoted  
 ‘ expressly.]

A. D.  
178.

expressly.] And possibly God has for this reason so ordered it, that many parts of the gospel should be declared to us (D) by *Luke*, which all are under a necessity of receiving; that so all might receive likewise his subsequent testimonie, which he has given concerning the acts and doctrine of the Apostles, and might have a sincere and uncorrupt rule of truth, and be saved. Therefore his testimonie is true, and the doctrine of the Apostles is manifest and uniform, without any deceit, hiding nothing from men, nor teaching one thing in private, and another in public."

*Paul's  
Epistles.*

IV. Thirteen epistles of *Paul* are expressly quoted, as his, by *Irenaeus*, and most of them, frequently, except the epistle to *Philemon*, which is not quoted at all. The quotations of *Paul's* epistles are so numerous, that they must be acknowledged by all, who but cast an eye upon this Father's writings. Nevertheless, perhaps it might be thought a defect, if amidst this plenty of passages concerning the other books of the New Testament, none should appear in behalf of *Paul's* epistles. I shall therefore put down one quotation at least of each of his epistles.

I. "This

(D) See the passage, p. 357.... 360.

Cha  
I  
' pla  
' Ap  
' pel  
' the  
' the  
' fles  
' for  
2.  
' in  
' Mon  
' shou  
' were  
3.  
' rint  
' has  
' not."  
4.  
' he q  
' preser  
' stle to  
' veth  
' till th  
' was m  
(t) L. 3  
(u) L. i  
(x) Lib.  
(z) Lib.

1. " This same thing Paul (t) has ex- <sup>A. D.</sup>  
 ' plained, writing to the Romans: Paul an <sup>178.</sup>  
 ' Apostle of Jesus Christ, separated to the gos- <sup>Rom. i.</sup>  
 ' pel of God..... And again, writing to <sup>1-4.</sup>  
 ' the Romans, of Israel he says: *Whose* are <sup>ix. 5.</sup>  
 ' the fathers, and of whom as concerning the  
 ' flesh Christ came, who is God over all blessed  
 ' for ever."

2. " This also Paul (u) manifestly shews <sup>1 Cor. x.</sup>  
 ' in his epistle to the Corinthians, saying: <sup>1-12.</sup>  
 ' Moreover, Brethren, I would not that ye  
 ' should be ignorant, how that all our fathers  
 ' were under the cloud."

3. " Paul (x) in the second to the Co- <sup>2 Cor. iv.</sup>  
 ' rinthians: *In whom the God of this world* <sup>4.</sup>  
 ' *has blinded the eyes of them that believe*  
 ' *not.*"

4. " The Apostle (y) Paul says: where  
 ' he quotes the words of Gal. iv. 8. 9. and  
 ' presently after, the Apostle (z) in the epi-  
 ' stle to the Galatians: *Wherefore then ser-* <sup>Gal. iii.</sup>  
 ' *veth the law of works? It was added, un-* <sup>19.</sup>  
 ' *till the seed should come, to whom the promise*  
 ' *was made.*"

5. " As

(t) L. 3. cap. 16. §. 3. al. cap. 18.

(u) L. iv. cap. 27. §. 3. al. cap. 45.

(x) Lib. 3. cap. 7. §. 1.

(y) Lib. 3. cap. 6. §. 5.

(z) Lib. 3. cap. 7. §. 2.



A. D. 178.  
*Eph. v. 30.* 5. "As the blessed (a) Paul says in the epistle to the *Ephesians*: *For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.* This epistle is often quoted by him, as writ to the *Ephesians*."

*Philp. iv. 18.* 6. "As also Paul (b) says to the *Philippians*: *I am full, having received of Epaphroditus, the things which were sent from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well-pleasing to God.*"

*Col. iv. 14.* 7. "Again he [Paul] says in the (c) epistle to the *Colossians*: *Luke the beloved physician greets you.*"

*1 Thess. v. 23.* 8. "The (d) Apostle in the first epistle to the *Thessalonians* says: *And the God of peace sanctify you wholly.*"

*2 Thess. ii. 8.* 9. "And (e) again in the second epistle to the *Thessalonians*, speaking of *Antichrist*, he says: *And then shall that wicked one be revealed.*"

10. Irenaeus thus begins his preface to his work against heresies: "Whereas some having rejected the truth bring in lying words, and vain genealogies, which minister questions,"

(a) *Lib. v. cap. 2. §. 3.*

(b) *Lib. iv. cap. 18. §. 4. al. cap. 24.*

(c) *Lib. 3. cap. 14. §. 1.*

(e) *Lib. 3. cap. 7. §. 2.*

(d) *Lib. v. cap. 6. §. 1.*

(f) *Lib. (b) Quo propter vel qui in ipso l. iii. cap*

# Chap. XVII. St. IRENAEUS.

367

' tions, as the Apostle says, *rather than god-ly edifying, which is in faith.* . . . . . This epistle is quoted several time.

A. D.  
178.

11. " Of this (f) *Linus*, [who he there says was Bishop of Rome] *Paul* makes mention in his epistle to *Timothy*." See 2 *Tim.* iv. 21. *Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus.*

2 *Tim.* iv  
21.

12. " As (g) *Paul* says: *A man that is an heretic, after the first and second admonition reject.*"

*Tit.* iii.  
10. 11.

13. The epistle to *Philemon* is not quoted in any of the works of *Irenaeus* now extant. But this may be very well owing to it's brevity, and that he had not any particular occasion to make use of it.

*Philem.*

14. We being now near to the conclusion of our collections, relating to St. *Paul's* epistles, I shall here put down a critical observation of *Irenaeus* upon his stile: " That (b) the Apostle frequently uses *hyperbata*, [or *transpositions of words from their natural order*,] because of the rapidity of his words, and

An obser-  
vation  
upon St.  
*Paul's*  
stile.

(f) *Lib. 3. cap. 3. §. 3.* (g) *Lib. 3. cap. 3. §. 4.*

(b) Quoniam autem hyperbatis frequenter utitur Apostolus propter velocitatem sermonum suorum, et propter impetum qui in ipso est Spiritus, ex multis quidem aliis est invenire. *L. iii. cap. 7.*

A. D. 178. and because of the mighty force of the  
 ' Spirit in him."

*Hebrews.* 15. As for the epistle to the *Hebrews*, *Eusebe* (E) has expressly assured us, that in a work now lost, *Irenaeus* had alleged some passages out of that epistle and the Wisdom of *Solomon*: but he does not say, that he had quoted it as *Paul's*. And perhaps this observation of *Eusebe* may amount to an intimation, that he had not observed that epistle cited in any works of *Irenaeus*, except that which he there mentions. We will however consider, what notice may appear to be taken of it in his remaining works.

He says in one place, " That (i) God made all things by the word of his power." And in *Heb.* i. 3. we have these words: *Upholding* (k) *all things by the word of his power.* In another place, " that *Moses* (l) is said by the Spirit to be a faithful steward and servant of God:" which character is given *Moses*,  
*Hebr.*

(E) See before, p. 347.

(i) Condens et faciens omnia verbo virtutis suae. L. 1. cap. 30. §. 9. [apud *Grabe*, p. 184. b.]

(k) ἑρπύων τε τὰ πάντα τῷ ῥήματι τῆς δυνάμεως αὐτοῦ.

(l) Non autem veré dominus appellatur, nec Deus vocatur a prophetis, sed fidelis Moyses famulus et servus Dei dicitur a spiritu, quod et erat. L. iii. cap. 6. §. 4. [*Grabe*, p. 210. b.]

Ch  
 Hebr  
 ment  
 naeus  
 there  
 Ag  
 tions  
 " wh  
 ' figu  
 ' dran  
 ' pora  
 ' hea  
 Which  
 body is  
 the lav  
 and n  
 never  
 thereun  
 pare li  
 the ex  
 and ix  
 the pat  
 be pur  
 things  
 these.

(m) Qu  
 ditae erant  
 atque delin  
 Lib. iv. c

Hebr. iii. 2. 5. but is also in the Old Testa-  
ment, *Numb.* xii. 7. and from thence Ire-  
naeus might as well take it. And from what  
there precedes seems rather so to do.

A. D.  
178.

Again : speaking of the external purifica-  
tions appointed before the coming of Christ :  
“ which, (m) *says he*, were ordained as a  
‘ figure of things to come, the law making a  
‘ draught of a certain shadow, and by tem-  
‘ poral things delineating eternal, by earthly  
‘ heavenly things.” *Paul says, Colos. ii. 17.*  
*Which are a shadow of things to come, but the*  
*body is of Christ.* It is said : *Heb. x. 1. For*  
*the law being a shadow of good things to come,*  
*and not the very image of the things, can*  
*never with those sacrifices make the comers*  
*thereunto perfect.* It may be proper to com-  
pare likewise *Hebr. viii. 5. Who serve unto*  
*the example and shadow of heavenly things.*  
and *ix. 23. It was therefore necessarie, that*  
*the patterns of things in the heavens should*  
*be purified with these : but the heavenly*  
*things themselves with better sacrifices than*  
*these.*

B b

Once

(m) Quae [munditiae exteriores] in figuram futurorum tra-  
ditae erant, velut umbrae cujusdam descriptionem faciente lege,  
atque delineante de temporalibus aeterna, de terrenis coelestia.  
Lib. iv. cap. xi. §. 4. [ap. Grabe, p. 311. b.]



A. D.

178.

Once more, he says, “ (n) *Enoch* was translated :” and in another place, “ that (o) *Enoch* having pleased God was translated in the body, foreshewing the translation of the just.” *Hebr. xi. 5. By faith Enoch was translated, that he should not see death: and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation, he had this testimonie, that he pleased God.* Wherein is a reference to *Gen. v. 24.* And to the same text *Irenaeus* likewise might refer.

I have thus carefully exhibited every thing, which may be supposed in the works of *Irenaeus* to have any allusion to this epistle.

Moreover by (p) *Photius* we are informed, that *Stephen Gobar* writes thus: “ *Hippolytus* and *Irenaeus* say, the epistle of *Paul* to the *Hebrews* is not his.” By which perhaps we need not understand, that *Irenaeus* had expressly said so any where. If we are so to understand him, the question is decided

(n) Et translatus est. L. iv. cap. 16. §. 2. [*Grabe*, p. 319. b.]

(o) Ὅπως Ἐνὸς εὐαρέσῃσας τῷ Θεῷ, ἐν σώματι μετετέθη, τὴν μετὰ θάνατον τῶν δικαίων προμηνύων. l. v. c. 5. §. 1. [*Grabe*, p. 404.]

(p) Ὅτι Ἰππόλυτος καὶ Ἰρηναῖος τὴν πρὸς Ἑβραίους ἐπιστολὴν Παύλου, εἰ ἐκείνη ἐστὶν αὐτοῦ. *Phot. Cod. 132. p. 904.*

Cha

ed at  
matt

H

clude

that f

expres

very f

ferenc

of Ire

esteem

the len

*Irenae*

scriptu

suppos

many

St.

receive

(r) and

the

churc

Greek

ed

(q) Prae  
quam omni  
sol. ad E

2. p. 571.

(r) Illuc  
bitur ad H  
omnibus re  
Apostoli P  
al. ep. 129

Chap. XVII. St. IRENAEUS.

371

ed about the opinion of this Father in this matter.

A. D.

178.

However, I think it may be fairly concluded with much probability from *Eusebe*, that so far as he knew, *Irenaeus* had never expressly ascribed it to *Paul*. And from these very few, and some of them but obscure references to this epistle in the remaining works of *Irenaeus*, it may be argued, he did not esteem it to be writ by *Paul*. Considering the length of this epistle, I think, that if *Irenaeus* had esteemed it a part of sacred scripture, (as he certainly would, if he had supposed it to be *Paul's*) we should have had many large quotations out of it.

St. *Jerome* (q) says, "That all the *Greeks* receive the epistle to the *Hebrews*:" and in (r) another place, "That it is received as 'the Apostle *Paul's*, not only by all the 'churches of the *East*, but also by all the 'Greek ecclesiastical writers of former times."

B b 2

But

(q) Praeterea plenius esse tractatum in epistola ad Hebraeos, quam omnes Graeci recipiunt, et nonnulli Latinorum, *Epistol. ad Evangelium Presbyter. inter epist. Crit. Hieron. Tom. 2. p. 571. Paris. 1699.*

(r) Illud nostris dicendum est, hanc epistolam, quae inscribitur ad Hebraeos, non solum ab ecclesiis orientis, sed ab omnibus retro ecclesiasticis Graeci sermonis scriptoribus, quasi Apostoli Pauli suscipi. *Epist. ad Dardanum. ibid. p. 608. al. ep. 129.*

A. D.  
178.

But there are few general observations without exceptions. We are able to judge for ourselves concerning the opinion of *Irenaeus* in this matter. What we have seen in his remaining works, and in the testimonie of *Eusebe*, and *Stephen Gobar*, concerning this writer in particular, is of more importance a great deal, than the general observation of *St. Jerome* concerning the *Greek* writers. And *Irenaeus*, on account of his residing chiefly in the Western part of the Roman Empire, may be reckoned among the *Latin* writers of the church. *Mill* (s) seems to allow, that *Irenaeus* did not own this epistle for *Paul's*.

Upon the whole then, *Irenaeus* affords proof, that the epistle to the *Hebrews* was in being in his time, and that he was acquainted with it: but he was not fully satisfied, it was *Paul's*. And having some doubts about that matter, he was cautious of making much use of it, as a book of scripture.

Catholic  
Epistles.

V. About the Catholic Epistles we must be particular, taking almost every thing that has an appearance of a relation to them.

I. *James*

(s) *Prolazom.* ad N. T. §. 117.

Cha  
us,  
kind  
be ye  
Iren  
" C  
" ar  
sently  
begin  
these  
epistl  
2.  
fulfill  
and i  
and b  
says:  
' saic  
' they  
' shev  
' circ  
' sabb  
' ed t  
(t) U  
num ejus  
(u) Fa  
(x) E  
data sunt  
cissione,  
putatum  
iv. cap.

1. *James i. 18. Of his own will begat he* <sup>A. D. 178.</sup> *us, by the word of truth, that we should be a* <sup>James.</sup> *kind of first-fruits of his creatures. 22. But*  
*be ye doers of the word, and not bearers only.*  
*Irenaeus says: " That (t) we are taught by*  
*" Christ to be imitators of his works, and*  
*" are made doers of his words." And pre-*  
*sently after, " That (u) we are made the*  
*begining of the creation." But I confess,*  
*these can hardly be called allusions to this*  
*epistle.*

2. *James ii. 23. And the scripture was*  
*fulfilled, which saith: Abraham believed God,*  
*and it was imputed to him for righteousness:*  
*and he was called the friend of God. Irenaeus*  
*says: " And (x) that not by these [the Mo-*  
*'saical rites] a man is justified, but that*  
*' they were given to the people for signs, is*  
*' shewn, in that Abraham himself, without*  
*' circumcision, and without observation of*  
*' sabbaths, believed God, and it was imput-*  
*' ed to him for righteousness, and he was*  

B b 3

*' called*

(t) Uti imitatores quidem operum, factores autem sermonum ejus facti. L. v. c. 1. init. [*Grabe*, p. 393.]

(u) Facti autem initium facturae. *ibid.*

(x) Et quia non per haec justificabatur homo, sed in signo data sunt populo, ostendit, quod ipse Abraham sine circumcissione, et sine observatione sabbatorum, credidit Deo, et reputatum est illi ad justitiam, et amicus Dei vocatus est. L. iv. cap. 16. §. 2. [*Grabe*, p. 319. a.]



*A. D.* 'called the friend of God.' *Irenaeus* in (y) 178. another place also observes, that *Abraham* was the *friend of God*. The words of this passage do doubtless very much resemble those of *St. James*. But the same thing in a manner is said *Gen. xv. 6. Romans iii. at the end, and iv. begining, and Gal. iii. 6.*

There is nothing more to be alleged relating to this epistle, beside a passage, which will be produced presently, after the particular account of the rest of these epistles.

1 *Peter.*

3. The first epistle of *Peter* is quoted as his more than once. "And (z) *Peter* says in his epistle: *Whom not seeing ye love.*" See 1 *Pet. i. 8.* Again: "*Peter (a)* says: *Not using our liberty for a cloak of maliciousness.*" See *ch. ii. 16.*

2 *Peter.*

4. Relating to the second epistle there is nothing in all the works of *Irenaeus*, but this sentence, twice (b) mentioned, *that the day of the Lord is as a thousand years.* See 2 *Pet. iii. 8.* *But beloved, be not ignorant of this*

(y) *Amicus factus est Deo*, p. 243. *Massuet.* [p. 315. *Grabe.*]

(z) *Et Petrus ait in epistola sua: Quem non videntes diligitis. l. iv. cap. 9. §. 2.* [*Grabe*, p. 307.]

(a) *L. iv. c. 16. fin.* [*Grabe*, p. 320.]

(b) *Quoniam enim dies domini sicut mille anni. L. v. cap. 23. §. 2.* [*Grabe*, p. 435.] *Ἡ γὰρ ἡμέρα κυρίου ὡς αἰώνων.* cap. 28. §. 3. [*Grabe*, p. 445.]

Cha  
this  
as a  
one d  
thing  
eye t  
actly  
5.  
are e  
Lord  
" W  
thus  
time.  
same  
He  
' mer  
' Lon  
' sayi  
' wor  
' com  
' an  
' lose  
These  
epistle  
first,  
This i

(c) I  
(d) §.  
(e) E  
eos pra

*this one thing, that one day is with the Lord A. D.*  
*as a thousand years, and a thousand years as* <sup>178.</sup>  
*one day.* But beside the words, there is no-  
 thing to determine us to think, he had an  
 eye to this epistle. Nor are the words ex-  
 actly the same.

5. The first and second epistles of *John* <sup>1 and 2</sup>  
 are expressly cited as *John's* the disciple of the *John.*  
 Lord. Having quoted his Gospel, he adds :  
 “ Wherefore (c) also in his Epistle he says  
 thus to us: *Little children, it is the last* <sup>1 John ii.</sup>  
*time.*” He quotes afterwards in the (d) <sup>18.</sup>  
 same chapter <sup>1</sup> *John* iv. 1. 2. 3. and v. 1.

Here also he says : “ and (e) in the fore-  
 ‘ mentioned epistle *John* the disciple of the  
 ‘ Lord commands us to shun these persons,  
 ‘ saying : *Many deceivers are entered into the* <sup>2 John 8.</sup>  
 ‘ *world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is*  
 ‘ *come in the flesh. This is a deceiver, and*  
 ‘ *an anticrist. Look to yourselves, that ye*  
 ‘ *lose not those things which ye have wrought.*”  
 These are plainly the words of the second  
 epistle. He seems to quote them as in the  
 first, the same epistle he had before quoted.  
 This is supposed owing to a slip of memorie.

B b 4

“ And

(c) L. iii. cap. 16. §. 5. [Grabe, p. 241.]

(d) §. 8.

(e) Et discipulus ejus Joannes in praedicta epistola fugere  
 eos praecepit, dicens ; *Multi seductores.* ibid. §. 8.

A. D.

178.

2 John

10. 11.

“ And *John* (f) the disciple of the Lord  
 ‘ does not so much as allow us to bid them  
 ‘ God speed: For, says he, *he that biddeth*  
 ‘ *them, God speed, is partaker of their evil*  
 ‘ *deeds.*”

The third epistle is no where quoted by him: but this omission can be of no moment, considering the shortness of the epistle.

Jude.

6. Concerning the epistle of *Jude*, there is nothing material, or that so much as deserves our notice: He says indeed “ that in the  
 ‘ time of *Lot* there rained from heaven upon  
 ‘ *Sodom* and *Gomorrab* fire and sulphur, as a  
 ‘ token of the just judgement of God:” Which possibly some may think a reference to *Jude*. ver. 7. But certainly the destruction of those cities might be as well learned from the book of *Genesis*. And the words, (g) *token of the just judgement of God*, are taken from 2 *Thess.* i. 5.

The omission of this epistle affords, I think, an argument, that either *Irenaeus* knew nothing of it, or else, that he did not own it as a book of authority. Though the  
 epistle

(f) Ἰωάννης δὲ ὁ τῷ κυρίῳ μαθητὴς . . . . . ὁ γὰρ λέγει αὐτοῖς, φρενὶ, χαίρειν, κοινωνεῖ τοῖς ἔργοις αὐτῶν τοῖς πονηροῖς. 1. 1. cap. 16. §. 3. [Grabe, p. 79.]

(g) Exemplum justii judicii Dei. L. iv. cap. 36. §. 4. [Grabe, p. 371.]

epistle is short, yet it seems to be so much to his purpose, who was writing against heretics, that he could not well avoid quoting it, if he knew it to be a book of canonical scripture, or universally received, as of authority.

7. However there is a passage of a general nature, [which I promised above] which may dispose some to think, he knew of these epistles, which are not expressly quoted by him, particularly the epistles of *James* and *Jude*.

Speaking of the Apostles who had written, as well as preached: "For *Peter*, and (*b*) *John*, and *Matthew*, and *Paul*, and the rest of them, and their companions, have quoted the words of the Prophets, according to the translation of the [seventy] "Elders." Here it seems, that he supposed, there were other Apostles, who had writ, beside those he nameth. For he plainly distinguishes between Apostles and their companions, by these last meaning *Mark* and *Luke*. By *the rest* therefore, or *others of them*, he may be thought to mean *James* and

(*b*) Etenim Petrus, et Joannes, et Matthaeus, et Paulus, et reliqui deinceps, et horum sectatores, prophetica omnia ita annuntiaverunt, quemadmodum seniorum interpretatio continet. L. iii. cap. 21. §. 3.



A. D.  
178.

and *Jude*. Nevertheless (i) *Grabe* thinks, it may be conjectured from this passage, and the silence about *James*, while he mentions the other Apostles who had writ, that *Irenaeus* had not seen the epistle of *James*, or that he did not own it. However, I think, few learned men are of his opinion. And I should be rather apt to suppose, it might afford an argument in favour of the epistles of *James* and *Jude*. But whether it be alone sufficient to out-weigh the argument for the other side, taken from the total omission, or very obscure citations of these epistles, in so large a work as this *Against Heresies*, may be questioned. Every one is able to judge of this point from the particular account I have given of the testimonies of this Father.

The Revelation.

VI. The *Apocalypse*, or *Revelation*, is often quoted by him as the Revelation of (k) *John*, the disciple of the Lord. And in one place,

(i) Dum Irenaeus Apostolos, quorum scripturas habemus, justo ordine recensens, Jacobum principem eorum omisit, ejus epistolam non vidisse aut agnovisse haud vane conjicitur, praesertim cum nusquam eam diserte allegarit. *Grabe*, in loc. p. 256.

(k) Sed et Joannes domini discipulus in Apocalypsi. L. iv. cap. 20. §. 11. lib. v. cap. 26. in.

Cha  
place  
time  
of th  
place  
of th  
confir  
nie o  
testim  
is cert  
wrote  
as wa  
VI  
books  
*Irenae*  
truth,  
witho  
stakes,  
throug  
may fa  
tection  
cially  
think i

(l) Δι  
ἐστὶ γὰρ  
πᾶς γινώσκων  
30. §. 3.  
(f) See  
(g) p.

place, he says: "It was (l) seen no long A. D.  
178. time ago, but almost in our age, at the end of the reign of *Domitian*." And in the place before cited from (F) *Eusebe*, he speaks of the exact and ancient copies of this book, confirmed likewise by the agreeing testimonie of those who had seen *John* himself. The testimonie of *Irenaeus* in behalf of this book is certainly very considerable. However, he wrote no Commentarie upon the Revelation, as was before shewn (G).

VII. I have now shewn at large, what An Obser-  
vation. books of the New Testament are cited by *Irenaeus*. I had much rather represent the truth, (as I have often endeavored to do) without a particular confutation of any mistakes, which some learned men have made through inadvertence. By this method one may save them the uneasiness, which the detection of a mistake is apt to occasion, especially if they are named. Nevertheless, I think it not improper in this place, to take notice

(l) Δι' ἐκείνου ἀν' ἐρρέθη τῷ κ' τὴν Ἀποκάλυψιν ἑωρακότων· ἔδ' ἔτι γὰρ πρὸ πολλῶν χρόνων ἑωράθη, ἀλλὰ σχεδὸν ἐπὶ τῆς ἡμετέρας γενεᾶς, πρὸς τὸ τέλος τῆς Δομετιανῆς ἀρχῆς. L. v. cap. 30. §. 3. [Grabe, p. 449.]

(F) See before, p. 348.

(G) p. 279. 280.

A. D.

178.

notice of an observation in *Le Clerc's* (*m*) Ecclesiastical Historie: That *Irenaeus* has cited all the books of the New Testament, except the third epistle of *John*. Whereas it is manifest from what has been said, that beside the omission of the just mentioned epistle, *Irenaeus* has not quoted at all, nor referred to the epistle of *Paul* to *Philemon*. And there are likewise several other books, concerning which it is doubtful, whether he has so much as referred to them. I have mentioned this, as some justification of the strictness of our present enquiry into the evidence given by the primitive Christian writers to the books of the New Testament, if indeed it needs any. But no reasonable person, from this particular inaccuracy, will draw any general conclusion, to the disadvantage of so learned and useful a writer as *Le Clerc*.

The sum  
of his tes-  
timonie.

VIII. We have then in *Irenaeus* full and express and abundant testimonie to the *four Gospels*,

(*m*) Recte Eusebius H. E. l. v. c. 8. pro more suo animadvertit, Irenaeum disertè meminisse quatuor Evangeliorum, quae habemus, Apocalypseos, et 1 Joannis . . . . . Verum et e citationibus ejus ceteros omnes N. T. libros, quos habemus, exceptâ unâ brevissimâ Joannis epistolâ, quae tertia numeratur, admissos, et pro Apostolicis habitos, ex indicibus locorum scripturae, qui nuperis editionibus subjecti sunt, patet. H. E. A. D. 180. §. 3.

Ch  
Gos  
Pa  
to  
vity  
but  
for  
quor  
and  
quor  
it's b  
secon  
there  
hardl  
Neve  
sage  
it ma  
also k  
The  
cribed  
testim  
that  
seems  
is the  
gelist.  
IX.  
New  
*Irenae*

Chap. XVII. St. IRENAEUS.

381

*Gospels*, the *Acts of the Apostles*, twelve of *Paul's* epistles. The omission of the epistle to *Philemon* may be well ascribed to it's brevity. He knew the epistle to the *Hebrews*, but was not satisfied, that it was *Paul's*. As for the Catholic Epistles, we have express quotations of the first of *Peter*, and the first and second of *John*, and the reason of not quoting the third may be well allowed to be it's brevity. But to the epistle of *James*, the second of *Peter*, and the epistle of *Jude*, there are none, or very obscure references, hardly any that can be reckoned material. Nevertheless, on account of a general passage concerning the writings of the Apostles, it may be questioned, whether he did not also know the epistles of *James* and *Jude*. The book of the *Revelation* is expressly ascribed to *John* the disciple of the Lord. His testimonie for this book is so strong and full, that considering the age of *Irenaeus*, he seems to put it beyond all question, that it is the work of *John*, the Apostle and Evangelist.

IX. Having shewn, what books of the New Testament are cited and owned by *Irenaeus*; I shall observe some general titles  
Titles and  
divisions  
of the books  
of the  
N. T.  
 and



A. D. 178. and divisions made use of by him in his quotations.

“ Concerning (n) which, says he, the ‘ *Scriptures* affirm, *that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.*” Gal. v. 21. He calls them also (o) *Divine Scriptures*, (p) *Divine Oracles*, (q) *Scriptures of the Lord*.

Sometimes : *It is said (r) in the Gospel* : at other times, (s) *in the Gospels*. The books of the New Testament are comprehended under these two divisions, of *Evangelic* and *Apostolic* writings. The *Valentinians*, he (t) says, *endeavor to fetch arguments for their opinions, not only from the Evangelic and Apostolic writings, but also from the Law and the Prophets* : Manifestly intending hereby a code or collection of Gospels, and Apostolical Epistles : though such general titles do not

(n) Περὶ ὧν καὶ γραφαὶ διαβεβαιῶνται. κ. λ. Lib. i. cap. vi. §. 3.

(o) Ἐν ταῖς θείαις γραφαῖς λείκεται. L. ii. c. 27. in.

(p) Τὰ λόγια τῶ Θεοῦ. L. i. c. 8. §. 1. fin.

(q) Et Dominicis scripturis enutriti. L. v. c. 20. §. 20. Vid. et L. ii. c. ult. ad fin.

(r) Ab hoc quod dictum est in evangelio. L. ii. c. 26. Non legunt in Evangelio. L. iv. c. 29. in.

(s) Non scrutati sunt in Evangeliiis. L. ii. c. 22. §. 3.

(t) Καὶ ὁ μόνον ἐκ τῶν Εὐαγγελικῶν καὶ τῶν Ἀποστολικῶν περι-  
ρῶνται τὰς ἀποδείξεις ποιεῖσθαι . . . . ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐκ νόμου καὶ  
προφητῶν. L. i. cap. 3. §. 6. Grabe, p. 19.

(u) C  
Evangel  
omnibus  
§. 2. al.  
(x) In  
maxim  
(y) Qu  
storum,  
tio, et Ap  
ii. cap. u

not shew exactly, what books are contained in each collection. A. D.  
178.

He speaks of the Scriptures of the Old and New Testament in this manner: *Since (u) all the Scriptures both Prophecies and Gospels, are open and clear, and may be heard of all . . . . . In another place: In (x) the Law and the Gospel the first and greatest commandment is to love the Lord with all the heart. He has these several expressions together: With (y) our assertions agree the preaching of the Apostles, the Doctrine of the Lord, the Declaration of the Prophets, the Word of the Apostles, the Ministration of the Law.*

X. His respect for the books of the New Testament has appeared in many passages here produced, particularly numb. II. where he affirms the compleat knowledge the Apostles had of the doctrine of Christ, and that they did not preach, much less write, till after the descent *Respect for  
the scriptures of the  
N. T.*

(u) Cum itaque universae scripturae, et Prophetiae, et Evangelia, in aperto sint, et sine ambiguitate, et similiter ab omnibus audiri possint, etsi non omnes credunt. L. ii. cap. 27. §. 2. al. cap. 46.

(x) In lege igitur et in Evangelio, cum sit primum et maximum praeceptum, &c. L. iv. c. 12. §. 3.

(y) Quoniam autem dictis nostris consonat praedicatio Apostolorum, et Domini Magisterium, et Prophetarum annuntiatio, et Apostolorum dictatio, et Legislationis ministratio. L. ii. cap. ult. ad fin.

A. D.

178.

descent of the Holy Ghost upon them: And that the Gospel was committed to writing by the will of God, that it might be for time to come the foundation and pillar of our faith.

Arguing from some texts of Paul to the Romans, he (z) says: "For he foreseeing by the Spirit, that there would be divisions caused by evil teachers, and being desirous to prevent all occasion of difference in these things, spake after this manner." And a (a) little before: "But the Holy Spirit foreseeing, there would be deceivers, and guarding beforehand against their deceit, says by Matthew: Now the birth of Christ was in this wise." See Matth. i. 18. where we read *Jesus Christ*. But it is likely, the copies of *Irenaeus* had *Christ* only. Again: Well (b) knowing, that the Scriptures are perfect, as being dictated [or, spoken] by the Word of God and his Spirit." And he

(z) Praevidens enim et ipse per spiritum subdivisiones maiorum magistrorum. . . . . ait quae praedicta sunt. L. iii. c. 16. §. 9.

(a) Sed praevideus Spiritus Sanctus depravatores, et praemuniens contra fraudulentiam eorum, per Matthaeum ait: Christi autem generatio sic erat. L. iii. c. 16. §. 2. al. cap. 17.

(b) Rectissime scientes, quia scripturae quidem perfectae sunt, quippe a Verbo Dei et Spiritu ejus dictae. L. 2. c. 28. §. 2. [al. cap. 47.]

(c) \*E  
ἐπιφύλα  
[ap. Gra  
(d) N  
quentes,  
semper e  
(e) \*O  
ἐν τῇ  
τῇ ἡμετέ  
τοῖς πρὸς  
ἐαυτοῦ  
πῶς τὰ  
ἐν ταῖς  
cap. 46.]

he says, "That a heavy (c) punishment awaits those who add to, or take from the scriptures." Lastly: "But we, says (d) he, following the one and only true God as our teacher, and having his words as a rule of truth, do all always speak the same things concerning the same things."

A. D.

178.

*Irenaeus* however does not slight reason. "A sound mind, says (e) he, that is sober, discreet, and a lover of truth, whatever things God has put in the power of men, and made knowable by us, these such a mind will study, and improve in them, rendring the knowledge of them easie by daily exercise. And the things knowable by us are those which fall under our sight, and whatsoever things are plainly and clearly

*The Value of Reason.*

C c

and

(c) Ἐπειτα δὲ τῷ προδένει, ἡ ἀφελόντῃ τὴν γραφήν, ἐπιτιμίαν ἢ τὴν τυχεύσαν ἔχοντῃ, κ. λ. L. v. c. 30. §. 1. [ap. Grabe, p. 448.]

(d) Nos autem unum et solum verum Deum doctorem sequentes, et regulam veritatis habentes ejus sermones, de iisdem semper eadem dicimus omnes. L. iv. c. 35. §. 4. [al. c. 69.]

(e) Ὁ ὕμνος νῦν, καὶ ἀκίνδυνος, καὶ εὐλαβής, καὶ φίλαληθής, ὅσα ἐν τῇ τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἐξουσίᾳ δέδωκεν ὁ Θεός, καὶ ὑποτίταχεν τῇ ἡμετέρᾳ γνώσει ταῦτα προθύμως ἐκμελεήσεται, καὶ ἐν αὐτοῖς προκοπεί, διὰ τῆς καθημερινῆς ἀσκήσεως ραδίαν τὴν μάθεισιν ἐαυτῷ ποιούμενον. Ἐστὶ δὲ ταῦτα, τάτε ὑπ' ὅσιν ὁρίσονται τὴν ὑμείραν, καὶ ὅσα φανερώς καὶ ἀναμφιβέλως αὐτολεξέται ἐν ταῖς θείαις γραφαῖς λέλεκται. L. 2. c. 27. in. [al. cap. 46.]



A. D. 178. ' and exprefly faid in the Divine Scriptures."

Of Reading the Scriptures.

XI. We juft now faw, that *Ireneaus* declares, that the Scriptures *are open and clear, and may be read by all.* Nevertheless in another place he exprefses himfelf to this purpofe: " Such (*f*) an one will be well ' fatisfied about thefe things, if he alfo ' diligently read the Scriptures with thofe ' who are Prefbyters in the church, with ' whom is the Apoftolical doctrine, as we ' have fhewn." By which however I think *Ireneaus* does not intend to fay, that Chriftian People fhould not read the Scriptures without the leave of their Prefbyters: But that they ought to take care, that they ufe thofe copies of the Scriptures that are uncorrupted, fuch as are in the hands of the Prefbyters of the Catholic church. Or, perhaps he rather means, that they fhould not only read the Scriptures privatly themfelves, but that in cafe any difficulties appear, they fhould likewife confult the Prefbyters in the church. Therefore he fays: *Such an one will be well fatis-*

(*f*) Post deinde et omnis fermo ei constabit, si et Scripturas diligenter legerit apud eos qui in ecclesia sunt presbyteri, apud quos est apostolica doctrina, quemadmodum demonstravimus. L. iv. c. 32. al. c. 52.

(*g*) Illud velut canon n. 2. *Mag*

*satisfied of these things, if he ALSO diligently read the Scriptures with those who are Pref- byters in the church.* A. D. 178.

XII. It may be worth while to consider, *Whether he quotes other Writings, as of Authority.* whether *Irenaeus* quotes any other Christian writings in the same manner, and with the same respect, which he shews to these books of the New Testament, commonly received as canonical. Beside the Scriptures of the Old and the New Testament, and *Josephus*, and some Heathen authors, and perhaps some heretical writers, the only authors quoted in *Irenaeus* by name are these following: *Clement of Rome, Hermas, Polycarp, Papias*, and *Justin Martyr*. For *Ignatius* is not so quoted by him.

I. We shall begin our considerations with *Hermas*; *Hermas*, because it is thought, there is somewhat (g) singular in the quotation of his book. The passage is taken notice of by *Eusebe*. Having observed what *Irenaeus* said of the *Apocalypse* of *John*, and that he had often cited the first epistle of *John*, and the first of *Peter*, he immediately adds: "Nor  
C c 2 ' did

(g) Illud etiam non omittendum, quod *Hermae* Pastorem velut canonicam scripturam laudet *Irenaeus*. L. iv. c. 20. n. 2. *Massuet. Dissert. Praev. in Irenae.* iii. §. 7.

A. D. 178. ' did (b) he only know, but he also receives  
 ' [or approves] the scripture of the *Shepherd*,  
 ' saying: *Well therefore spake the scripture,*  
 ' *which says: First of all believe, that there*  
 ' *is one God, who created and formed all*  
 ' *things, and what follows."*

Upon this passage I would briefly make these several remarks.

1.) This is the only *Christian* writing quoted by *Irenaeus* with an appearance of a like respect to what he has for the writings of the Apostles, and their two disciples and followers, *Mark* and *Luke*.

2.) By *scripture* we need not understand sacred and inspired scripture, but only *writing*. So the word is frequently used by the ancients. Mr. *Richardson* (i) gives instances of it from *Origen*, *Tertullian*, *Rufin*, and *Augustin*. *Eusebe* (k) useth it of the *Gospel of Peter*, which he absolutely rejects. *Epiphanius* (l) likewise speaks of the *Apocryphal Scriptures* or writings, which were used by the *Encratites*. Nor do the words of *Eusebe* imply, as I conceive, that he thought

*Ire-*

(b) Οὐ μόνον δὲ οἶδεν· ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀποδέχεται τὴν τῷ ποι-  
 μένῳ γραφὴν, λέγων· καλῶς οὖν εἶπεν ἡ γραφή ἢ λέγεσθαι,  
 καὶ λ. Euf. H. E. p. 173. B.

(i) Canon of the New Testament vindicated, p. 26. 27.

(k) H. E. L. vi. c. 12. p. 213. C.

(l) Haer. 47. §. 1. p. 400. A.

(m) Hermas,  
 Philoc.  
 (n) Κορινθίων  
 potentiff

*Irenaeus* reckoned that book a part of the sacred scripture. *Eusebe* says, *Irenaeus receives*, that is, approves, or commends the writing called the *Shepherd*. He seems to take notice of this, because (m) that book was much despised by some. Nor is *Eusebe* speaking there only of the books of the New Testament, cited by *Irenaeus*: But he proceeds next to observe, that he had several times mentioned the sayings of a certain *Apostolical Presbyter*: and adds, that he had also cited *Ignatius*, and *Justin Martyr*, whose works certainly were never reckoned a part of sacred scripture.

A. D.  
178.

When therefore *Irenaeus* says here: *Well spake the scripture*, his meaning is exactly this: *Well spake that writing, work, or book, which says*:—It is certain, that *Irenaeus* himself has so used this word *γραφή*, or *scripture*. Giving an account of the epistle of *Clement*, writ to the *Corinthians* in the name of the church of *Rome*, he (n) says:

C c 3

The

(m) H. E. p. 72. C. D. See before ch. iv. The history of *Hermas*, at the beginning. Vid. et Orig. de Princ. L. iv. in. Philoc. cap. 1. p. 9.

(n) Ἐπέσειλεν ἡ ἐν Ῥώμῃ ἐκκλησία ἰκανωτάτην γραφὴν τοῖς Κορινθίους. L. iii. cap. 3. Scripsit quae est Romae ecclesia potentissimas literas Corinthiis. Interp. L.



A. D. 178. *The church of Rome sent a most excellent*

*scripture, that is, epistle, to the Corinthians.* And (o) afterwards: *from that scripture, or epistle, any one may learn the Apostolical tradition of the church.* Massuet has (p) a good note to this purpose upon the place.

3.) There are numerous and long quotations of most of the books of the New Testament, received by *Irenaeus* as sacred and divine scripture. And but one short single citation of this book of the *Shepherd*, though it is much larger than any book of the New Testament. Considering the largeness of this work of *Hermas*, it is probable, it would have been often quoted by *Irenaeus*, if he had esteemed it a part of sacred scripture.

*Clement of Rome.*

2. The epistle of *Clement*, though so great a man, and a companion of the Apostles, is but once quoted by *Irenaeus*: and it is rather quoted as an epistle of the church of *Rome*, than of *Clement*. The design of quoting it too is only to shew, what was the tradition or belief of the Christian churches.

The

(o) Ex ipsa scriptura, qui velint, discere possunt. *ibid.*

(p) *Scriptura* ] Vocem γράφι, qua paulo ante usus est Irenaeus, quamque recte vertit interpres, *litteras*, et hic reddere debuisset, *litterae* seu *epistola*: nam de *Clementis epistola* sermo est. *Massuet.*

The *Heretics*, with whom he argues, some-  
times (q) cavilled against SCRIPTURE: A. D.  
178.

and pretended, that oral tradition was a more  
certain and compleat rule of truth. *Ire-  
naeus* descends into this kind of argument  
likewise, and says the belief and testimonie  
of the Apostolical churches were on his  
side, as well as the SCRIPTURES of the  
Apostles. “ And because, as he (r) says,  
‘ it was impossible to shew this at large of  
‘ all the Apostolical churches, he should  
‘ therefore instance in the greatest, most an-  
‘ cient and well known church of *Rome*,  
‘ glorious on account of it’s being founded  
‘ by two Apostles, *Peter* and *Paul*. These  
‘ blessed Apostles, he says, having founded  
‘ the church, gave the office of the Bishop-

C c 4

‘ rick

(q) Cum enim ex SCRIPTURIS arguuntur, in accusationem  
convertuntur ipsarum SCRIPTURARUM, quasi non recte ha-  
beant, neque sint ex auctoritate, et quia varie sint dictae, et  
quia, non possit ex his inveniri veritas ab his, qui nesciant  
traditionem. Non enim per literas traditam illam, sed per  
VIVAM VOCEM. L. iii. cap. 2. in.

(r) Traditionem itaque Apostolorum in toto mundo mani-  
festatam. in omni ecclesia adest respicere omnibus qui vera  
velint videre; et habemus annumerare eos qui ab Apostolis  
instituti sunt episcopi in ecclesiis, et successores eorum us. ue  
ad nos, qui nihil docuerunt, neque cognoverunt, quare  
ab his deliratur. . . . . Sed quoniam valde longum est  
omnium ecclesiarum enumerare successiones; maximae, et  
antiquissimae . . . . ecclesiae, eam quam habet ab Apostolis  
traditionem indicantes, confundimus omnes eos, &c. ibid,  
cap. 3.

A. D. 178. *rick to Linus, who was succeeded by An-  
encletus, and he by Clement. In the time  
of this Clement there being no small dissen-  
sion among the brethren at Corinth, the  
church of Rome sent a most excellent epi-  
stle to the Corinthians, containing the doc-  
trine lately received from the Apostles,  
which declares, that there is one God Al-  
mighty. . . . . And that (s) He is declar-  
ed by the churches, to be the Father of  
our Lord Jesus Christ, they who will may  
learn from the epistle itself, and under-  
stand the Apostolical tradition of the  
church, since that epistle is more ancient  
than the false teachers of the present time.”  
And he goes on to enumerate the several suc-  
cessors of Clement to Eleutherus, the twelfth  
Bishop of Rome. “In this very order and  
succession, says he, has the tradition which  
is in the church, and the preaching [or  
doctrine] of the truth, come to us from the  
Apostles.”*

It is plain then, that he quotes this epistle  
of Clement, or the church of Rome, only as  
repre-

(s) Hunc Patrem Domini nostri Jesu Christi ab ecclesiis  
annunciari, ex ipsa scriptura qui velint discere possunt, et  
Apostolicam Ecclesiae traditionem intelligere. Ibid.

representing the tradition of the church agreeable to the doctrine of the Apostles.

A. D.

178.

3. The next writer we are to consider is *Polycarp*.

*Polycarp*. And it is of him that *Irenaeus* likewise speaks next, immediatly after he had shewn the tradition of the true doctrine from the Apostles in the church of *Rome*. It is the passage, which we before transcribed from *Irenaeus* at the begining of the historie of St. *Polycarp*. Which passage concludes thus: "There is also a most excellent epistle of *Polycarp* writ to the *Philippians*, from which they who are willing, and are concerned for their own salvation, may learn both the character of his faith, and the doctrine of the truth. Moreover the church in *Ephesus* also, founded by *Paul*, and in which *John* resided until the time of *Trajan*, is a true witnessse of the tradition of the Apostles."

It is plain then, that he alleges these epistles of the church of *Rome*, and *Polycarp*, and also the testimonie of the church of *Ephesus*, as declaring the doctrine of the Apostles agreeable to the *Sacred Scriptures*. But these epistles are manifestly distinguished from the Gospels, and other books of the New Testament, which he had just before called

*Scrip-*



A. D. 178. *Scripture* in the strictest and highest sense of the word.

Let me add here likewise, that though he has taken so many long passages from the Gospels, and most of the other books of the New Testament; he recites none distinctly from the epistles of *Clement*, or *Polycarp*: but only gives a general description of those writings, and refers men to the reading of them.

*Papias*, 4. *Papias* likewise is but (t) once mentioned in the works of *Irenaeus* by name. The passage is already transcribed at the begining of the IX. chapter of this book.

*Justin M.* 5. *Justin* is quoted twice: "Well (u) says *Justin* in his treatise against *Marcion*." And again, "Well (x) said *Justin*." In both which places he puts down a short saying, or sentence of his.

I do not perceive then, that there is the lest ground for supposing, that *Irenaeus* had the like respect for any other *Christian* writings, which he had for those books of the  
New

(t) L. v. c. 33. §. 4. *Grabe*, p. 455.

(u) Καὶ καλῶς ἰεσίνου ἐν τῷ πρὸς Μαρκίωνος συντάγματι  
πιστίν. L. iv. c. 6. §. 2. al. c. 14. [*Grabe*, p. 300.]

(x) L. v. c. 26. §. 2. [et ap. *Grabe*, p. 441.]

# Chap. XVII. St. IRENAEUS.

395

New Testament commonly received by us, A. D.  
178.  
which are quoted by him.

6. There is likewise a passage or two (y) Sayings a-  
scribed to  
Christ.  
in *Irenaeus*, in which some words are ascribed to our Lord, which are a small matter different from those recorded in our Gospels: From whence some have been disposed to think, they might possibly be taken out of Apocryphal Gospels. But certainly nothing more needs to be added to shew, that *Irenaeus* received but *four* Gospels, and that they are the same with ours. Nor shall I stay to enquire particularly, whether his small variation from our Gospels in those places be owing to his using his memorie in those quotations, or to a difference of reading in the copies used by *Irenaeus*. Moreover, as to one of those passages, it may

(y) Et ideo Dominus dicebat ingratis existentibus in eum : si in modico fideles non fuistis, quod magnum est quis dabit vobis ? Vid. Luc. xvi. 11, L. ii. c. 34. §. 3. al. cap. 64. Haec, [inquit *Massuetus* in l.] ex memoria citavit *Irenaeus*. Nam paulo aliter habet Evangelii textus, Luc xvi. 11. .... Unde ad sensum magis quam ad verba attendisse videtur auctor noster. Vid. et *Irenae*. L. i. c. 20. §. 2. al. cap. 17. Ἄλλοι καὶ ἐν τῷ ἐξηκέναι, πολλάκις ἐπεθύμησα ἀκῶσαι ἐνὰ τῶν λόγων τούτων, καὶ οὐκ ἔχον τὸν ἐρῶντα. Ad quem locum ait *Massuetus* : Haec verba frustra quaesieris in scripturis sacris ; nullibi exsunt. Ab haereticis istis. vel male feriato quodam confecta sunt. Vid. et *Grabe* in loc. And Mr. *Jones* likewise in y be consulted upon both these passages. *New and full Method*, &c. V. i. p. 526. 547.

A. D. 178. may be (z) questioned, whether *Irenaeus* does not designedly put it down, as it was expressed in some Apocryphal writings of the heretics, against which he is there arguing: and not as found in any writing, supposed by him to contain a true account of our Lord's words.

*Apostolical  
Constitu-  
tions.*

7. There is a passage among the Fragments of St. *Irenaeus*, published by the learned Dr. *Pfaff*, Professor of Divinity, and Chancellor of the University of *Tubingen*, from some manuscripts in the King of *Sardinia's* Librarie at *Turin*: which may be supposed by some people to mention, and give some authority to the *Apostolical Constitutions*.

The second of those Fragments begins thus: " They (a) who are acquainted with  
" [or, have understood] the later constitu-  
" tions of the Apostles know, that the Lord  
" in the New Testament has appointed a  
" new

(z) See, beside the learned men already referred to, *Mill Proleg.* n. 331.

(a) Οἱ ταῖς δευτέραις τῶν ἀποστόλων διαλάξεσι παρικολλη-  
θῆκότες ἴσασι, τὸν κύριον νέαν προσφορὰν ἐν τῇ καινῇ δια-  
θήκῃ καθεστηκέναι κατὰ τὸ Μαλαχίᾳ τοῦ προφήτου . . . ὥσπερ  
καὶ ὁ Ἰωάννης ἐν τῇ ἀποκαλύψει λέγει· τὰ θυμιάματα εἰσὶν αἱ  
προσευχαὶ τῶν ἁγίων· καὶ ὁ Παῦλος παρακαλεῖ ἡμᾶς παρα-  
στήσαι τὰ σώματα ἡμῶν θυσίαν ζώσαν, ἁγίαν, εὐάρεστον τῷ  
Θεῷ, τὴν λογικὴν λατρείαν ἡμῶν. καὶ πάλιν· ἀναστήρωμεν θυσί-  
αν ἀνίστασθαι, τετέστι καρπὸν χειλέων. κ. λ. *Irenaei Frag-  
menta Anecdota.* p. 25. *Hagae Comitum* 1715.

" new offering, according to what is said in *A. D.*  
 " the Prophet Malachi: *For from the rising* <sup>178.</sup>  
 " *of the sun even unto the going down of the* *Mal. i. 11.*  
 " *same my name shall be great among the*  
 " *Gentils, and in every place incense shall be*  
 " *offered to my name, and a pure offering.*  
 " As also John in the Revelation says: *The Rev. v. 8:*  
 " *incense is the prayers of the saints. And*  
 " Paul exhorts us to *present our bodies a li-* *Rom. xii.*  
 " *ving sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God,* <sup>1.</sup>  
 " *which is our reasonable service: And a-*  
 " *gain: Let us offer the sacrifice of praise,* *Hebr. xiii.*  
 " *that is, the fruit of the lips. These offer-* <sup>15.</sup>  
 " *ings indeed are not according to the law,*  
 " *the hand-writing of which the Lord hav-* *Col. ii.*  
 " *ing blotted out, has taken it out of the* <sup>14.</sup>  
 " *way, but according to the spirit. For* *John iv.*  
 " *God ought to be worshiped in spirit and* <sup>24.</sup>  
 " *truth."*

Upon this passage I make only two remarks.

1. There is no good and sufficient evidence, that this is a passage of *Irenaeus Bishop of Lyons*. I learn from *Dr. Pfaff's* Preface to his edition of the *Fragments of St. Irenaeus*, that the learned *Marquess Scipio Maffei* had proposed in the *Italian Literarie Journal* several objections against their genu-



A. D.  
178.

genuinneſſe. I have not ſeen that Journal. However there can be no queſtion, but Dr. *Pfaff* has fairly repreſented thoſe objections in his Preface. But ſo far as I am able to judge, he has not fully answered them, eſpecially thoſe againſt this *ſecond* fragment, which is attended with ſome difficulties peculiar to itſelf. I perceive likewiſe by a note of the Marqueſs *Maffei* upon (b) the *Complexions of Caſſiodorus*, or *Caſſiodorius*, (as that learned man thinks his name ſhould be writ) that he is not convinced by what Dr. *Pfaff* has ſaid. I add one objection againſt this ſecond fragment, which I do not ſee urged by the Marqueſs *Maffei*: That the writer, whoever he is, ſeems to own the epiſtle to the *Hebrews* for St. *Paul's*: whereas, I ſuppoſe it has been (c) before ſhewn to be probable, that St. *Irenaeus*, though he was acquainted with that epiſtle, did not know it to be St. *Paul's*, or own it as ſuch. It appears to me indiſcreet, to admit the genuinneſſe of a paſſage, taken out of one of the *Greek Chains*, as they are called, which is liable to ſeveral conſiderable difficulties.

2. The

(b) *Annot. ad Complexion. Caſſiodor. in 1 Ep. ad Corinth.*  
§. xx.

(c) See p. 368—372.

2. The former part of this passage is obscure. Nor is it any wonder, that there should be some obscurity, when we know not what preceded in the place of the author, whence it was originally taken. It is not easie to say, what is meant by the *later*, or second *constitutions of the Apostles*. It is by no means plain, that the author intends any book with that title. He rather seems to mean only the constitutions, ordinances, or appointments of the Apostles in the books of the New Testament commonly received. And these he calls the *later* in opposition to the more ancient ordinances of the law. This is the sense, which first offers itself to my mind, and appears to be the most natural and likely meaning of the words. I have transcribed the more of this passage, that those of my readers, who have not an opportunity of consulting the original, may the better form some judgement of it. I shall only add, that in the third passage, published by Dr. Pfaff, as a *fragment of St. Irenaeus*, the word *constitute*, *appoint*, or *ordain* is used concerning the directions and precepts of the Apostles in their epistles:

“ The

A. D. 178. "The (d) Apostles have ordained, that we  
 Col. ii. 16. "should not judge any man in meat, or in  
 "drink, or in respect of an holy day, or of  
 "the new moon, or of the sabbath days."

Perhaps he intends particularly the precepts of the Apostles in their epistles: and these he calls the *later*, or second, with regard to the preceding doctrine and precepts of Christ himself in the Gospels. But we need not be much concerned about the meaning of a passage, of which we know neither the time, nor the author.

On what ground he receives Mark's and Luke's Gospels, and the Acts?

XII. The last thing, which we are to consider, is, upon what account *Irenaeus* receives the Gospels of *Mark* and *Luke*, and the *Acts of the Apostles*, written likewise by *St. Luke*: since these were not Apostles, and he does not appear to have received any books as part of the sacred scriptures of the New Testament, but such as were written by Apostles, excepting the writings of these two persons. And, if I mistake not, the ground upon which he receives the writings of these two Evangelists is, that they were well informed of the doctrine of the Apostles, and have faithfully recorded it.

This

(d) Ἐταξαν οἱ ἀπόστολοι, μὴ δεῖναι ἡμᾶς κρίνειν τίνα ἐν βρώσει, καὶ ἐν μέθει, καὶ ἐν ποσὶ ἑορτῆς, κ. λ. *Irenaei Fragmenta Anecd.* p. 147.

This seems evident from the passage above <sup>A. D.</sup> (H) cited, where he says: “ *Mark*, the <sup>178.</sup> disciple and interpreter of *Peter*, delivered to us in writing the things which had been preached by *Peter*. And *Luke*, the companion of *Paul*, put down in a book the gospel preached by him.”

For this reason it is, that he calls all the Gospels, the *Gospels of the Apostles*. The *Valentinians* seem to have writ a new Gospel, of which *Irenaeus* speaks in this manner: “ They (e) have become so audacious, *says he*, as to call that which has not been long since writ by them the Gospel of truth, though it agree in nothing with the Gospels of the Apostles.” And he there speaks several times of the things contained in the Gospels being *delivered by the Apostles*, in a passage somewhat obscure: For which reason I place the rest of it only in the margin, as we have it, in the *Latin Version*. But there

D d

were

(H) p. 353. 354.

(e) Si quidem in tantum processerunt audaciae, uti quod ab his non olim conscriptum est, veritatis evangelium titulent, in nihilo conveniens Apostolorum Evangeliiis, ut neque Evangelium quidem sit apud eos sine blasphemia. Si enim quod ab eis profertur, veritatis est Evangelium, dissimile est autem hoc illis, quae ab Apostolis nobis tradita sunt, qui volunt, possunt discere, quemadmodum ex scripturis ostenditur, jam non esse id quod ab Apostolis traditum est, veritatis Evangelium, &c. L. iii. cap. xi. §. 9.



A. D.  
178.

were two only of the Gospels writ by Apostles. The other two can be no otherwise the Apostles, but as they contain the preaching or doctrine of the Apostles: just as all the Scriptures of the New Testament are *the Scriptures of the Lord*, as containing his doctrine, whilst he himself wrote nothing. I say, they can be no otherwise the Gospels of the Apostles, but in the sense before-mentioned: unless it should be supposed, that after they were written by those Evangelists, they were expressly approved and authorised by the Apostles. But this is not the ground *Irenaeus* goes upon: (which is what we are now enquiring into:) but the veracity of these Evangelists, and their intimacie with the Apostles: whose disciples and inseparable companions they were, and whose doctrine they have faithfully delivered in writing.

And that *Irenaeus* could not proceed upon the ground of an express approbation of the Apostles, is evident, at least as to *Mark's* Gospel; in that he says, it was *after their exit*; that is, either death or departure of the Apostles, *Peter* and *Paul*; that *Mark* delivered to us in writing the things that had been preached by *Peter*.

These

Chap. XVII. St. IRENAEUS.

403

These two Gospels then and the *Acts* were *A. D.*  
received by him, as faithful narratives of the *178.*  
Apostles doctrine, composed by persons fully  
acquainted with it; with the guidance and  
assistance, undoubtedly, of the Holy Spirit.

This observation, if just, may be of use  
to us hereafter.





C H A P. XVIII.

A T H E N A G O R A S.

*His Historie.*

A. D.  
178.

WE have two pieces of *Athenagoras*, an Apologie for the Christians, and a treatise of the Resurrection. The Apologie has the title of an *Ambassie*. From whence some have concluded, that *Athenagoras* was deputed by the Christians of the countrey in which he lived, and waited upon the Roman Emperour with this Apologie. Others (a) rather think, there is no reason to suppose it was ever presented. And the *Greek* word translated (b) *ambassie* may as well signify a petition.

There is no mention of *Athenagoras*, in *Eusebe* or *Jerome*. But he is quoted by *Methodius* in a passage of his preserved in  
*Epipha-*

(a) See *Bayle* Dict. H. et Critic. *Athenagoras*, note B.

(b) Πρεσβεία.

(c) *Epiphanius* and (d) *Photius*. And there A. D.  
178.  
is a particular account given of him by *Philippus Sidetes* (who flourished in the begining of the fifth centurie) in a fragment of his *Christian Historie* published by (e) *Dodwell*. *Philip* says, *Athenagoras* was at first a Hea-then, and that he intended to write against the Christians: but when he was reading the scriptures, with a view of making his work the more compleat, he was converted. He says, that *Athenagoras* flourished under *Adrian* and *Antonine* the Pious, to whom his Apologie was presented. And that he was the first President of the catechetical school of *Alexandria*, and master of *Clement*, who wrote the *Stromata*. I think it not easie to relye upon this account of *Philip*. *Basnage* (f) has made divers exceptions to it. It is certain, the Historie of *Philip* has no great character given it by (g) *Socrates*, or (h) *Photius*, who had read it. As there is little said of *Athenagoras* by the ancients that can be relied on, we can know little certain of him, but what may be collected from his

D d 3

works

(c) *Haer.* 64. §. 21. *vid. et Petav. not p. 261.*(d) *Cod.* 234. p. 908.(e) *Append. ad Diff. Iren.* p. 488.(f) *Ann. P. E.* 176. §. 6.(g) *L.* 7. c. 27.(h) *Cod.* 35. p. 21.



*A. D.* 178. works themselves. Nor will they afford much light into his historie. In the title however of both these pieces he is stiled an *Athenian*, and a *Philosopher*.

The Apologie is inscribed to *Marcus Aurelius Antoninus*, and *Lucius Aurelius Commodus*. But learned men differ about the time of it. *Pagi* (*i*) is of opinion, the Apologie was writ in 166: *Dodwell* in (*k*) 168: *Cave* (*l*) about 177. *Du Pin* (*m*) in 178. *Basnage* (*n*) in 176. *Tillemont* (*o*) not before 177, which is also the opinion of (*p*) Mr. *Mosheim*.

The chief ground of this difference is a doubt about one of the persons, to whom the Apologie is addressed. *Pagi* and *Dodwell* suppose, it was addressed to *Marc Antonine*, and his adopted brother and colleague in the Empire, *Lucius Verus*, who died in 169. The learned men of the other opinion think, it was inscribed to *Marc Antonine*, and his son *Commodus*. And if to them, then after

*Commodus*

(*i*) Critic. in *Baron*. A. D. 165. §. vi. 177. §. viii. &c.

(*k*) Dissert. *Cypr*. xi. §. 37. 38.

(*l*) Hist. Lit. (m) *Bibl. des Auteurs Ecc.*

(*n*) *Annal. Polit. E. An.* 176. §. 6. &c.

(*o*) *Memoires Ec.* Tom. ii. *Persecution de Marc Aurel* Art. 8. and note x.

(*p*) *Vid. ejusd. diff. de vera actat. Apol. Athenag.*

*Commodus* had the Proconsular power: which is the opinion of *Basnage*, who therefore places the Apologie in 176: or else, when *Commodus* had equal power with his father, which he did not receive till the year 177. This is the opinion of *Tillemont*, and others, who place it in 177, or a little later. In behalf of this later date *Tillemont* (q) has a learned argument, to whom I refer the reader, and to *Bayle*'s account of the controversy in his Dictionarie, in the article of *Athenagoras*. I shall only observe farther, that (r) *Fabricius*, who doubtless had seen and weighed the arguments on both sides, says: “ *Athenagoras* seems to have writ his  
 ‘ Apologie between the year of *Christ* 177,  
 ‘ and 180, and to have presented it (so he  
 ‘ thinks) to *M. Antonine* and *Commodus*,  
 ‘ whose names are prefixed to it in all the  
 ‘ manuscripts.” And *Mr. Mosheim* has supported his opinion with divers arguments and considerations, omitted by others.

As this opinion appears to me much the

D d 4

more

(q) In the place before referred to.

(r) Apologiam videtur scripisse Athenagoras intra annum Christi 177, et 180. obtulisseque M. Aurelio Antonino et L. Commodo, quorum nomen in MSS. codicibus constanter praefixum legitur. Bibl. Gr. vol. vi. p. 86.

A. D. more probable of the two, I therefore place  
178.

*Athenagoras* at the year 177. or 178.

It is likely, the discourse, *Of the resurrection of the dead*, was written after the *Apologie*: because, as *Tillemont* observes, he seems to promise such a thing at the end of the *Apologie*: where having fallen upon the subject of the resurrection, he (s) defers a fuller discourse upon it to another time.

In this discourse he rather argues from Reason than Scripture. His two points are the possibility, and the fitnessse of a resurrection.

Though this author has been seldom mentioned in antiquity, there is no one doubts the genuinnessse of either of these pieces.

*Athenagoras* is a polite writer, and his Greek Attic. He has only rendered his stile less agreeable by frequent parentheses.

*His Testimonie to the books of the New Testament.*

*Matthew.* I. “ For (t) he that looks, says he, on a  
‘ woman, to lust after her, hath committed  
‘ adulterie already in his heart.” See *Matth.*  
v. 28.

II. “ We

(s) Ἄλλ’ ἀνακέδω μὲν ὁ περὶ τῆς ἀναστάσεως λόγος.

(t) Ὁ γὰρ βλέπων, φησὶ, γυναῖκα πρὸς τὸ ἐπιθυμῆσαι αὐτῆς, ἥδη μεμολέχεν ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ αὐτῷ. p. 36. B. *Paris.*  
1663.

II. " We can convince you, *says he to the* A. D.  
178.  
 ' *Emperours*, that we are not atheists, by the  
 ' principles we hold, which are not of hu-  
 ' man invention, but delivered and taught  
 ' by God. What (u) then are our maxims,  
 ' in which we are instructed? *I say unto*  
 ' *you: Love your enemies, bless them that*  
 ' *curse you, pray for them that persecute you,*  
 ' *that ye may be the children of your Father*  
 ' *which is in heaven, who maketh his sun to*  
 ' *rise on the evil, and on the good, and sendeth*  
 ' *rain on the just, and on the unjust."* See  
 Matth. v. 44. 45.

These are so plain quotations of the words in St. *Matthew's* Gospel, that I need not put down in the margin the *Greek* at length. I may however observe, that the originals of St. *Matthew* and *Athenagoras* agree, as they are represented to do by this translation.

There are likewise in the *Apologie* some other passages (x) taken from St. *Matthew's* Gospel, especially from our Saviour's sermon on the mount. And having recited some of those precepts of our Lord, he adds:

(u) Τίνες οὖν ἡμῶν οἱ λόγοι, οἷς ἐντρέφόμεθα; λέγει ὁ κύριος  
 x. λ. p. 11. B. C.

(x) Vid. p. 2. D. 12. A. D. et 38. A.



A. D. adds: that (y) he alleges but a few out of  
 178. many.

N. T.

Athenagoras.

Mark.

III. Mark x. 6.

III. Because (a) in

But (z) from the be-  
 gining of the creation  
 God made them male  
 and female.

the begining God  
 formed one man and  
 one woman.

He mentions this observation with the  
 same view with that of our Lord in St.  
*Mark*, as an argument against divorces:  
 though it must be owned, there are much the  
 same words in *Matth.* xix. 4.

N. T.

Athenagoras.

Luke.

IV. Luke xvi. 18.

IV. For (c) who-

Whosoever (b) putteth  
 away his wife, and  
 marrieth another, com-  
 mitteth adulterie.

soever, says he, shall  
 put away his wife,  
 and shall marry ano-  
 ther, committeth adul-  
 terie.

It

(y) Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν, μικρὰ ἀπὸ μεγάλων, καὶ ὀλίγα ἀπὸ  
 πολλῶν, ἵνα μὴ ἐπὶ πλεον ὑμῖν ἐνεχλοῖμην, p. 13. A.

(z) Ἀπὸ δὲ ἀρχῆς κτίσεως,  
 ἄρσεν καὶ θῆλυ ἐποίησεν αὐτοὺς  
 ὁ Θεός.

(a) Παραβαίνων μὲν τὴν  
 χεῖρα τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὅτι ἐν ἀρχῇ ὁ  
 Θεὸς ἓνα ἄνδρα ἔπλασε καὶ  
 μίαν γυναῖκα. p. 37. B.

(b) Πᾶς ὁ ἀπολύων τὴν  
 γυναῖκα αὐτῆς, καὶ γαμέει ἑτέ-  
 ραν, μοιχεύει.

(c) Ὃς γὰρ ἂν ἀπολύσῃ,  
 φησὶ τὴν γυναῖκα αὐτῆς, καὶ  
 γαμήσῃ ἄλλην, μοιχᾷται,  
 Legat. p. 37. B.

It may be questioned, whether he refers to St. *Luke*, or to St. *Matth.* v. 32. or rather *xix. 9.* It is however a quotation. A. D. 178.

N. T.

*Athenagoras.*

V. John x. 30. *I (d) and my Father are one.*

Ver. 38.—*That ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him.*

V. The (e) Father and the Son being one: and the Son being in the Father, and the Father in the Son.

It is undoubted, that he acknowledged the Gospel of St. *John*, from his (f) so often calling the Son the *Word* or Reason of God.

N. T.

*Athenagoras.*

VI. John xvii. 3. *And (g) this is life eternal, that they*

VI. For this alone (b) concerned, to know the one God, might

(d) Ἐγὼ καὶ ὁ πατὴρ ἓν ἐσμεν . . . . . ἵνα γινώτε, καὶ πιστεύσητε, ὅτι ἐν ἐμοὶ ὁ πατὴρ καὶ ἐν αὐτῷ.

(f) p. 10. B. C. 12. C. D.

(g) Αὕτη δὲ ἐστὶν ἡ αἰώνια ζωὴ, ἵνα γινώσκωσί σε τὸν μόνον ἀληθινὸν Θεόν, καὶ ὃν ἀπέστειλας Ἰησοῦν Χριστόν.

(e) Ἐνὸς ὄντος τοῦ πατρὸς καὶ τοῦ υἱοῦ ὄντος δὲ τοῦ υἱοῦ ἐν πατρὶ, καὶ πατρὸς ἐν υἱῷ. p. 10. C.

17. D. 27. A. 34. D.

(b) Ὑπὸ μόνῃ δὲ παρατεμνόμενοι τέττα' ὃν ἴσως Θεὸν καὶ τὸν παρ' αὐτοῦ λόγον εἰδέναι . . . . . πολὺ δὲ καὶ κρείττονα ἢ εἰπεῖν λόγῳ. τὸν ἐδεχόμενον βίον εἰδότες. p. 12. C. D.

*A. D* might know thee the  
 178. *only true God, and*  
*Jefus Cbrist whom thou*  
*hast sent.*

and the Word [pro-  
 ceeding] from him.  
 . . . . . knowing,  
 that the life we shall  
 obtain hereafter is  
 better than can be ex-  
 pressed in words, if  
 we shall but go hence  
 pure from all unright-  
 eousness.

*AAs.* VII. Acts xviii. 25.  
*Neither (i) is wor-*  
*shipped with mens hands,*  
*as though he needed*  
*any thing.*

VII. " Since he  
 (k) wanteth not, nor  
 needeth any thing."  
 He there gives this  
 character of the Dei-  
 ty upon the same ac-  
 count that St. Paul  
 does: and much to  
 the same purpose a-  
 gain: (l) " Not as if  
 God needed."

*Romans.* VIII. Rom. i. 24.  
*Wherefore God gave*

VIII. *Men with(m)*  
*men working those*  
*them*

(i) Οὐδὲ ὑπὸ χειρῶν ἀν-  
 θρώπων θεραπεύεται, προσ-  
 δέομενός τινος.

(k) Ἀνευδεῖς καὶ ἀπροσδεής.  
 p. 13. B.

(l) Οὐχ ὥς δεόμενος τοῦ  
 Θεοῦ, p. 15. C.

(m) Ἀρσενες ἐν ἀρσείοις τὰ  
 δυνάμει

them up to uncleanness. . . . (n) to dishonor their own bodies between themselves.

27. Men with men working that which is unseemly.

IX. Rom. xi. 36. For (p) of him, and through him, and to him are all things.

X. Rom. xii. 1. I beseech you therefore, brethren,—that ye (q) present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God,

things which are abominable, many ways abusing their comely and beautiful bodies, and dishonoring the excellent workmanship of God.

IX. “ For of (o) him, and through him were all things made.” Though perhaps he refers to John i. 3.

X. But why should I be concerned about whole - burnt - offerings, which God does not need? It is much (r) better therefore which

(n) . . . . Τὸ ἀτιμάζεσθαι τὰ σώματα αὐτῶν ἐν ἑαυτοῖς . . . . ἄρσενες ἐν ἄρσεσι τὴν ἀχρημοσύνην κατέργαζόμενοι.

(p) Ὅτι ἐξ αὐτοῦ, καὶ δι’ αὐτοῦ, καὶ εἰς αὐτὸν τὰ πάντα.

(q) Παρασῆσαι τὰ σώματα ὑμῶν θυσίαν ζῶσαν . . . τὴν λογικὴν λατρείαν ὑμῶν.

δεινὰ κατέργαζόμενοι, ὅσων σεμνότερα καὶ εὐειδέεστερα σώματα, παντοίως αὐτὰ ὑβρίζοντες, ἀτιμοῦντες καὶ τὸ ποίημα τοῦ Θεοῦ τὸ καλόν. p. 37. C.

(o) Πρὸς αὐτοῦ γὰρ, καὶ δι’ αὐτοῦ πάντα ἐγένετο. p. 10. C.

(r) Καὶ τοῖς προσφέρειν δέον ἀναίμακτον θυσίαν, καὶ τὴν λογικὴν προσάγειν λατρείαν. p. 13. D.

A. D.  
178.



A. D. *which is your reasonable service.*  
178.

1 Corinths. XI. 1 Cor. xv. 30.

*And why stand we in jeopardy every hour?*

31. *I protest by your rejoicing, which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I dye daily.*

32. *If after the manner of men, I have fought with beasts at Ephesus; what advantageth it me, if the dead rise not? Let us eat and drink, for to morrow we die.*

to offer an unbloudy sacrifice, and bring a *reasonable service.*

XI. He had argued at length the disadvantages of virtue; that many of the best men endure in this life vexation and sorrow, reproaches and calumnies: "that if there be no retribution, (s)——virtue is a senseless thing: to follow pleasure is the greatest good, and that ought to be the common maxim and law of all, which is admired by the voluptuous and wicked: *Let us eat and drink, for to morrow we die.*"

Though these last words are also in *Ij. xxii. 13.* it seems from the conformity of his argument, that he refers to *St. Paul.*

N. T.

(s) De Refurr. p. 62. A. B.

N. T.

Athenagoras.

A. D.

178.

XII. 1 Cor. xv. 54.

XII. It is manifest

So (t) when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption.

therefore, that according to the Apostle, this (u) corruptible and dissipated must put on incorruption, that the dead being raised up to life, and the separated, and even consumed parts being again united, every (y) one may receive justly the things he has done in his body, whether they be good or bad.

1 Cor.

2 Cor. v. 10. For we must all appear before the judgement-seat of Christ, that (x) every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he has done, whether it be good or bad.

XIII. Gal. iv. 9:

XIII. And fall Galat. How

(t) Ὅταν δὲ τὸ φθαρτὸν τὸτο ἐνδύσῃται ἀφθαρσίαν. κ. λ.

(u) Εὐδὴλον παντὶ τὸ λειπόμενον, ὅτι δεῖ, κατὰ τὸν ἀπόστολον, τὸ φθαρτὸν τοῦτο καὶ διασκεδασθὲν ἐνδύσασθαι ἀφθαρσίαν. De Resurr. p. 61. C.

(x) ἵνα κομίσῃται ἕκαστος τὰ διὰ τοῦ σώματος, πρὸς ἃ ἔπραξεν, εἴτε ἀγαθὰ, εἴτε κακὰ.

(y) ἕκαστος κομίσῃται δικαίως ἃ διὰ τοῦ σώματος ἔπραξεν, εἴτε ἀγαθὰ, εἴτε κακὰ. *ibid.*

A. D. 178. *How (x) turn ye a- down to the beggarly  
gain to the weak and and (a) weak elements.  
beggarly elements!*

These are the very words of *Paul*, which *Athenagoras* borrows, though he useth them upon a different account.

N. T.

*Athenagoras.*

1 Tim.

XIV. 1 Tim. v.

XIV. Wherefore

1. 2. *Rebuke not an elder, but entreat him as a father, and the younger men as brethren: the elder women as mothers, the younger as sisters, with all purity.*

(b) according to the difference of age, some we count as sons and daughters, others we consider as brethren and sisters, and the aged we reverence as fathers and mothers.

XV. 1 Tim. vi.  
16. *Who only has immortality, dwelling in (c) the light which no man can approach unto.*

XV. For God is (d) to himself all things, light inaccessible, . . . or, according to our translation, light which

no

(x) Πᾶς ἐπιστρέφετε πάλιν ἐπὶ τὰ ἀδελφὰ καὶ πτωχὰ σοι-  
χεῖα.

(c) ὥς οἱ κύνες ἀπρόσιτοι.

(a) Ἐπὶ τὰ πτωχὰ καὶ ἀ-  
δελφὰ σοιχεῖα καταπίπτομεν.  
Legat. p. 15. D.

(b) p. 36. C.

(d) Πάντα γὰρ ὁ Θεὸς ἐστὶν αὐτὸς αὐτῷ, ὥς ἀπρόσιτος.  
p. 15. C.

(e) ἔργων

(f)

(g)

δράστη  
α, ἀλλ  
φειόμεν  
Θεοῦ δ

no man can approach *A. D.*  
unto. 178.

XVI. James iii. 13.  
*Who is a wise man,  
endowed with know-  
ledge amongst you? Let  
him shew out of a  
good conversation his  
works with meeknesse  
of wisdom.*

XVII. James v. 7.  
*Behold the husband-  
man waiteth for the  
precious fruit of the  
earth, and bath long  
patience for it, until  
he receive the early  
and later rain.*

XVIII. 2 Pet. i.  
21. *For (g) the pro-  
phecie came not in old  
time by the will of  
man: but holy men*

XVI. For our (e) *James.*  
excellence lies not in  
the structure of words,  
but in the demonstra-  
tion and doctrine of  
works.

XVII. For as the  
(f) husbandman, when  
he has cast the seeds  
into the earth, ex-  
pecteth the time of  
the harvest, &c.

XVIII. Of Moses, 2 Peter.  
Isaiab, Jeremiah, and  
the other Prophets,  
he says: " Who (h)  
according to the ex-

E e

spake

(e) Οὐ γὰρ μελέτη λόγον, ἀλλ' ἐπιδείξει καὶ διδασκαλίᾳ  
ἔργων τὰ ἡμέτερα. p. 37. B.

(f) P. 37. A.

(g) Οὐ γὰρ θελήματι ἀν-  
δράων ἠνέχθη ποτὲ προφητεία,  
ἀλλ' ὑπὸ πνεύματι ἁγίῳ  
φερόμενοι ἐλάλησαν οἱ ἅγιοι  
θεοῦ ἄνθρωποι.

(h) Καὶ τῶν λαπῶν προφη-  
τῶν, οἱ κατ' ἐκκασιν τῶν ἐν  
αὐτοῖς λογισμῶν κινήσαντες  
αὐτὸς τοῦ θεοῦ πνεύματι, ὁ  
ἐνεργούντο ἐξεφώνησαν. p. 9.  
D.



A. D.  
178. *spake, as they were  
moved by the Holy  
Ghost.*

stasie of the thoughts  
in them, the divine  
Spirit moving them,  
spoke out those  
things which were  
operated in them."

*Revela-  
tion.*

XIX. Rev. xx. 13.

*And the (i) sea gave  
up the dead which  
were in it: and death  
and hell delivered up  
the dead which were  
in them.*

XIX. He speaks  
of it as the general  
opinion of Christians,  
that (k) at the time  
of the resurrection,  
"The earth shall de-  
liver up her dead."

*Sayings.*

XX. There is a particular passage in *A-  
thenagoras*, which we may not omit. It  
follows what we have transcribed at numb.

XIV. "The aged we reverence as fathers  
' and mothers. It is therefore our great con-  
' cern, that the bodies of those whom we  
' call sisters, or by any other name of kin-  
' dred, should be preserved chaste and un-  
' polluted, the (l) Word again saying to  
us:

(i) Καὶ ἔδωκεν ἡ θάλασσα  
τὰς ἐν αὐτῇ νεκρὰς, καὶ ὁ θά-  
νατος καὶ ὁ ᾄδης ἔδωκαν τὰς  
ἐν αὐτοῖς νεκρὰς.

(k) Καὶ ἀποδώσει μὲν νο-  
μίζων τὴν γῆν τὰς ἐδιδως νεκ-  
ρὰς, p. 39. A.

(l) Πάλιν ἡμῖν λέγουσι τοῦ λόγου· ἔαν τις διὰ τοῦτο  
ἐκ δευτέρου καταφιλήσῃ, ὅτι ἤρρεσεν αὐτῷ καὶ ἐπιφέρουσι οὕτως  
οὐκ ἀκριβάσασθαι τὸ φίλημα, μᾶλλον δὲ προσκύνημα δεῖ, ὡς  
ἔστι μικρὸν τῇ διανοίᾳ παραδολεωδέειν, ἔξω ἡμᾶς τῆς αἰωνί-  
ου τῶν ζώων. p. 36. C. D.

' us: [or our doctrine teaching us:] If any A. D.  
178.  
' one shall kiss a second time, because it pleas-  
' eth him: And afterwards: A kisse is to be  
' given so slightly, that it may be rather only  
' a salutation: for if the mind be in the least  
' polluted, it endangers our enjoyment of eter-  
' nal life."

I think, we need not solicitously enquire, whence *Athenagoras* had these observations. There is no necessity of supposing, he ascribes them to Christ, or that he took them out of any copies of our Gospels, or from any Apocryphal Gospel. They may be as well cited from some Christian writer, whom *Athenagoras* thought to have expressed himself upon this subject agreeably to the strict doctrine of Christ delivered in the Gospels. Mr. Jones (m) has some remarks upon this passage.

XXI. I have now represented very parti- The sum  
of his te-  
stimonie.  
cularly the testimonie, which *Athenagoras* gives to the books of the New Testament. But all these passages are not equally material. It is plain, he owned the Gospels of St. *Matthew* and St. *John*. There do not appear so clear references to those of St. *Mark* and St. *Luke*. Here are also plain references or allusions to the epistle to the *Romans*, and the first

(m) New and full method of settling the canonical authority of the New Testament, Vol. I. p. 551,

A. D.  
178.

first to the *Corinthians*: words of which last are expressly cited by him, as the Apostle's, meaning *Paul*: and there is a probable allusion to the second epistle to the *Corinthians*, and the epistle to the *Galatians*. The passages here alleged by me concerning the *Acts of the Apostles*, the first to *Timothie*, the epistle of *St. James*, the second of *St. Peter*, and the book of the *Revelation*, are doubtful, and are only proposed to the reader's consideration. And beside these he has a passage, not found in any book of the New Testament, which might at first sight seem to be taken out of some book of authority with him: but notwithstanding, it may be as well supposed the passage of some Christian writing, esteemed by him only as an orthodox pious work.

Though we meet with no references in *Athenagoras* to the other books of the New Testament, they may have been all, or most of them, received by him, as books of authority. It is not to be expected, that in two such pieces as these we should find references to all the books, esteemed sacred by the author.

The END of the FIRST VOLUME.



I.

ast

e's,

lu-

ms,

af-

Es

pi-

er,

ot-

on-

af-

ew

em

ity

be

if-

or-

in

ew

oft

u-

wo

fe-

by